

True Mother Hak Ja Han Moon: An Anthology 1
August 22, 2017

Book 4: May You Blossom, My Beloved



☪ True Mother in the eyes of True Father

May You Blossom, My Beloved

SUNHAK INSTITUTE OF HISTORY

Book 4: May You Blossom, My Beloved

Contents

Editor's Preface 3

Part 1 Who Is True Mother?

Outline of True Mother's Life 1 13

1 True Mother, the Victor of Love 17

2 The Background of True Mother's Birth 22

3 The Central Succession of Faith in Preparation for the Coming Lord 28

4 True Mother Came as the Only Begotten Daughter 33

Part 2 The Holy Wedding and the Path of the Bride of Heaven

Outline of True Mother's Life 2 47

1 The Marriage Supper of the Lamb and the Path of the Heavenly Bride 52

2 The Engagement Ceremony and the Holy Wedding 63

3 True Mother Came as a True Parent 75

4 True Mother and the True Family 84

Part 3 The Wilderness Course and True Mother's Victory

Outline of True Mother's Life 3 97

1 The Seven-year Course and Its Significance 101

2 True Mother's Suffering and Victory 107

3 The Wilderness Course and the Day of Victory of Love 113

4 True Mother and the Suffering Course at Danbury 119

Part 4 The Opening of the Era of Women and the World Speaking Tours

Outline of True Mother's Life 4 127

1 The Advent of True Mother and the Liberation of Women 131

2 The Proclamation of the Liberation of All Women 143

3 True Mother's World Speaking Tours 160

4 The Mission of Japan, the Mother Nation, and the Suffering of the Missionaries 190

Part 5 The Proclamation of True Parents and the Chung Pyung Providence

Outline of True Mother's Life 5 199

1 The Proclamation of the Messiah, Lord of the Second Advent, Savior and True Parents, and the Dawn of the Completed Testament Age 204

2 Plaque of Commendation for True Parents' Cosmic Victory and Calligraphic Tribute to True Mother 214

3 The Chung Pyung Providence and Spiritual Blessings 225

Part 6 The Declaration of Ultimate Unity and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

Outline of True Mother's Life 6 247

1 The Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship and the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents 252

2 The Proclamation of Cheon Il Guk and the Declaration of the Ultimate Unity of True Parents 273

3 We Are Grateful for True Mother 290

Part 7 True Father's Letters

Outline of True Mother's Life 7 299

1 My Beloved 303

2 The Light of True Mother 313

3 May You Blossom, My Beloved 322

Book 4: May You Blossom, My Beloved

Part 1: Who Is True Mother?

Outline of True Mother's Life 1: Who Is True Mother?

After the Fall of the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, God established numerous central figures to carry out the work of the providence of restoration. On the foundation thus laid down, He ultimately sent His only begotten son, Jesus, to the earth as the Messiah. However, due to the disbelief of the people of Israel and Judaism, Jesus died on the cross and his short life was brought to an end before he could fulfill his mission. Once again, God sent True Parents as the Lord of the Second Advent and the savior of humanity through the Korean people.

God sent True Father, His only begotten son, to lay the foundation as the Messiah and Lord of the Second Advent, and at the same time, He established True Mother, His only begotten daughter, and prepared her as the Bride of Heaven. On April 11, 1960, with their Holy Wedding finally completing the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, they appeared in the world as the True Parents and opened the era of the True Parents.

True Mother's birth and faith

True Mother was born on the 6th day of the 1st lunar month in 1943, at the home of her maternal grandparents, which was located at number 26, Shineui village in Anju county, South Pyeongan Province. She was the only daughter of her father, Han Seung-oon (Dae Bu Nim), and mother, Hong Soon-ae (Dae Mo Nim).

Dae Bu Nim was a teacher at the Takyeong Public Elementary School and Manseong Public Elementary School, which were private schools in North Korea. He also attended the New Jesus Church of Rev. Lee Yong-do, where he was a church elder during its early years.

Dae Mo Nim was born into a devout Christian family in Jeongju, North Pyeongan Province, and she attended a Presbyterian church until the age of 19. After that, she went on a witnessing tour with the team of missionary Hwang Guk-ju, and for many years after 1933 she was active in churches that were preparing to attend the Lord at his Second Advent, spending time in Rev. Lee Yong-do's New Jesus Church, Kim Seong-do's Holy Lord Church, and Heo Ho-bin's Inside the Womb Church.

In 1948, the three generations of mothers and daughters -- Grandmother Jo Won-mo, Hong Soon-ae, and True Mother -- braved crossing the line of fire to flee to South Korea in order to escape from the oppression of the communist authorities in the North. After that, due to the Korean War, True Mother spent her schooldays as a refugee in Daegu, Jeju Island and Chuncheon.

In December of 1955, Dae Mo Nim met True Father at the headquarters church in Cheongpa-dong and joined the Unification Church. True Mother met True Father for the first time at the young age of 13 in March 1956, when Dae Mo Nim brought her to the former headquarters church right after her graduation from Bongeu Elementary School in Chuncheon. True Mother then attended Seongjeong Girls' Middle School in Seoul and, after graduating, enrolled in St. Joseph's Nursing School in April 1959.

True Mother as seen from five different perspectives

Since God's providence of salvation is the work of sending the third Adam, the Lord of the Second Advent, and the third Eve, the Bride of Heaven, it is very important to examine True Father's and True Mother's births and lives of preparation for the providence. In particular, we need to know clearly about True Mother, who, together with True Father, has led the era of True Parents. Through examining True Father's words, we can examine the status of True Mother from the following five perspectives:

The first is that True Mother is the third Eve, the object partner of the third Adam. Due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, God sent His only begotten son, Jesus, to the Jewish people as the Messiah entrusted with the mission of the second Adam. However, the Jewish people disbelieved him, thus frustrating Jesus' plans to find the second Eve, establish her as his Bride, participate with her in a holy wedding, become true husband and wife and true parents centered on God, and complete the providential work of saving humankind. Therefore, in order to fulfill the mission that Jesus left incomplete, God sent True Father as the Messiah of the Second Advent, the third Adam, and True Mother as the third Eve.

The second is that True Mother is the Holy Spirit in substantial form. She is the object partner of the Returning Lord. Though Jesus came to earth as God's substantial object partner, he died on the cross because of the disbelief of the Israelites, after which he was resurrected, receiving the Holy Spirit as his spiritual Bride. True Father said that we receive fire when the Holy Spirit comes into our hearts and

becomes one with the power of our yearning for Jesus, the Bridegroom. Through the words of Jesus and the work of the Holy Spirit, Christianity has spread throughout the world. At the time of the Second Advent, the Holy Spirit appears in substantial form. This is none other than True Mother.

The third is that True Mother is the only begotten daughter, the object partner of the only begotten son. God sent His only begotten son, Jesus, to the Jewish people as the Messiah to bring salvation to fallen humanity. Jesus, the only begotten son who received the first love of Heaven and came to this earth, should have received his Bride, the only begotten daughter, and together they should have become the True Parents under God's blessing and formed a true family. Jesus died on the cross, however, and the position of the only begotten daughter was left vacant. True Mother came to this earth as the only begotten daughter who was found and established by God through the providence of restoration through indemnity, which was carried out for a long time after Jesus' mission could not be completed. True Mother, the only begotten daughter, was born on the foundation of three generations of faith in the Second Advent among the Korean people who were prepared in advance.

The fourth perspective is that True Mother is a true parent. She carries out the work of giving rebirth to humanity as their true parent, in order to save them both spiritually and physically. The Holy Wedding by which the Messiah of the Second Advent received his Bride, the Holy Spirit in substantial form, and the two of them became true husband and wife, is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb recorded in Chapter 19 of the Book of Revelation. This event opened the way to the realization of God's ideal of creation, for which He had created heaven and earth in the first place, and ushered in the historic day on which Adam and Eve, at the standard of the original ideal of creation, could appear as the True Parents. The Holy Wedding also opened the gates to the Blessing; through which all people finally can receive the grace of rebirth and thus rid themselves of original sin. True Parents have now called upon those who have received the Blessing to serve as tribal messiahs and have led them on the path toward the salvation of all people.

The fifth is that True Mother comes from a different root. "True Parents come to earth having the root of God's true love, true life and true lineage. Their mission is to cut down to their stumps the trees of fallen people, which were born from the root of false love, and graft the cuttings of true love onto them" (Chambumo Gyeong 1.1.1:13). True Mother was born from a root fundamentally different from that of fallen humankind. She comes to earth without original sin, bringing true love, true life and true lineage.

In accomplishing her mission, True Mother has gone through the course of restoring the positions of daughter, sister, wife, mother, grandmother and queen in front of True Father, and she also has fulfilled her mission as the True Mother of humanity. True Parents achieved ultimate oneness and became God's embodiments with the status and authority of the king of kings and the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, and proclaimed that the providence of restoration had been perfected, completed and concluded.

Chapter 1: True Mother, the Victor of Love

Gratitude to True Mother

As the rightful True Mother, Mother is the mother of her family, the mother of the church and the mother of the cosmos. As such, she carries a greater responsibility than any woman in history has ever carried. Given her heavy burden, Mother has special strengths and abilities, compared to other people. First, she was born with a keen spiritual intuition. She is extremely insightful and observant about people and things, and her judgment is very accurate and clear. So what comes to her mind is always true. Second, Mother's heart is absolutely loyal toward me, True Father. No matter what others say, she is deeply determined to do whatever I need done for the sake of the Will. This is Mother's faith; it is also Mother's conviction. With this kind of faith and conviction, even in the most trying times she demonstrated remarkable endurance in order to fulfill the goal. With that, she gained victory.

As the True Father, I am deeply grateful that Mother possesses a special disposition toward the Will. She is never selfish. She always wants to give something, not only to her own children but also to you, the members of her church family. Whatever precious things she has, she finds joy in giving them to others.

Many people in the world may think that True Mother takes pleasure in possessing many clothes and jewels, but in fact, this is quite untrue. Whatever good things she has she wants to give to others, to make them happy.

There were even times when she could not find suitable clothes in her closet because she had given away so many of them to others. One day when the weather had suddenly changed, I wanted her to go out with me, but she could not find appropriate clothes for the weather. Of course, she would not be able to follow my tradition unless she lived that way. But I tell you, Mother lives even more frugally than I do.

Mother always did her best to read my mind precisely, and she understood me far better than I expected her to. I was always grateful to Mother for the following three things. First, Mother is very spiritually

sensitive and perceptive, so she could understand the spiritual situation quickly and clearly. Second, she is always happy to follow any direction I give her with absolute loyalty and devotion. Thirdly, she feels that all her possessions belong to God and the Heavenly Kingdom, so she can selflessly give anything she has to others, and forget that she has given it.

One more point is that she has brought our home many children. When I look at each one of them, I see excellence and good character. They are also very healthy and natural children. I am eternally grateful to Mother for this. (1977.02.23, Belvedere Training Center)

Victorious True Mother

As I have already mentioned, I am preparing to expand our influence beyond the boundaries of the nation up to the cosmic level. If you approach this work thinking only of your own abilities, you will not be able to continue very long. For example, if Mother were a person who looked at things from her own perspective, thinking of herself, she would not be able to stand in the position of Mother. If there are any leaders here who have self-centered thinking, they should pack their bags and leave now. Anyway, this is a place where people like that cannot remain very long.

That is the point of view with which I look at the leaders. I judge values from that point of view. I assign people to jobs, taking into account how selfish or selfless they are. I am teaching the Principle and thinking about the Principle and practicing the Principle. Today you have heard something about the path I have walked as the leader of the Unification Church. Mother is a victorious woman in this regard. I am also victorious when it comes to this point.

Mother fought for seven years in pursuit of the standard of perfection. That seven-year period was filled with all kinds of accusations, slander, false rumors and misunderstandings that swirled around her, attacking her position in the True Family. All that she endured during that time caused her heart to bleed. Yet in fact, all of it was necessary. The issue was whether she could overcome everything and be victorious.

Mother was victorious over all of it. She had to remain silent and patiently endure. Amid those circumstances, Mother just waited for those days to pass. No matter what happened, Mother kept silent and endured with faith. Persevering, she made herself an offering with indomitable faith, a faith she maintains to this day. Eventually, the circumstances turned around, and instead of criticizing her, all the members bowed their heads before Mother, thinking, "She is truly the Mother of the cosmos." In this way they came to attend her with respect.

Some unbelievable things happened back then. In the end, those people who had accused Mother fell away one by one. Back when those situations were occurring, I was well aware of how to deal with them, because I knew the Principle. I knew how to fulfill my mission as the leader of the Unification Church in order to bring the final victory. If Mother had not known the Principle, she would have been at a loss, not knowing what to do.

Ultimately, love is the issue. Love is the center of everything, and everything is related to the problem of love. However, this issue of love can drive people to take the wrong direction and even go to extremes. I came to subjugate fallen love and rectify it. This is also to restore the hearts of human beings toward God.

Truly for Mother as well, it has been the cross of love. However, even while enduring all manner of ordeals due to the issue of love, Mother did not utter even one word of excuse. Mother understood, on her own, the significance of these challenges and just endured. This is why she could be victorious in the end.

I have never spoken to Mother about these things as much as I am talking to you about them today. What you can see in her is purely an expression of victorious faith. It is her sacrificial heart and absolute faith in me. Mother and Grandmother Hong Soon-ae have both been victorious in this way. (1977.02.23, Belvedere Training Center)

Chapter 2: The Background of True Mother's Birth

True Mother's hometown and the Cheongju Han clan

Korea has 4,300 years of history. This history includes the era of Gojoseon. The Korean people were called the Dongyi people, a people in the East who studied astronomy and interpreted the stars to ascertain heavenly fortune. In every era of its history Korea has upheld a national religion. In the eras of Silla and Goryeo, it was Buddhism, and in the era of Joseon, it was Confucianism. When we trace back to the earliest history of Korea, we find a record that the Han clan preceded even the Gojoseon era. There we can find the origin of the Korean people, from a time even earlier than the Gojoseon era. (615-173, 2009.08.22)

The Korean alphabet was revealed during the reign of King Sejong, who promulgated it as Hunmin Jeongeum (訓民正音), meaning "the teaching of correct sounds for the people." The name can be interpreted to mean that those who teach and learn what is right will continue on, even if their country falls into ruin. I came to learn that the Dongyi people [here referring to the Korean race] have such a history and character. It is generally believed that Korean history spans approximately 4,000 years, beginning with the Gojoseon era. However, the Han people already existed 3,000 years prior to the Gojoseon era, and their place of origin on the Korean Peninsula was Cheongju. I am now working to systematically organize all the material that I have compiled and publish a book about the ancient history of Korea, one that does not treat Korea in isolation but demonstrates its links with the history of other Far Eastern nations. (613-043, 2009.06.03)

Pyeongan Province means a province, a home, a road, where you can settle down because it is flat. Jeongju and Anju are both located there. Mother's hometown is Anju, and mine is Jeongju. (266-272, 1895.01.01)

North Chungcheong Province is Mother's ancestral hometown. Cheongju is the original hometown of the Han family. Mother always boasts to me of Cheongju being the hometown of the Hans. Cheongju is made up of the Chinese characters Cheong (清) meaning "clear" and ju (州) meaning "village." (142-211, 1986.03.11)

Mother's ancestors lived in South Pyeongan Province. Mother's surname is Han. Where are the ancestors of the Han family? They are in Cheongju. Therefore, if our sons and daughters wanted to make their way to their mother's ancestral hometown, they would visit the land of Cheongju. (085-091, 1976.03.02)

True Mother's maternal grandmother's family name is Jo. Her family lived in a wealthy village, a community of tile-roofed houses where many government officials lived. True Mother's maternal grandmother, the third generation of her ancestral line, was a direct descendant of Jo Han-jun. Coming out of such a meritorious family tradition, both her maternal grandmother and Dae Mo Nim greatly loved True Mother and devoted special attention to raising her. Since Dae Mo Nim was often traveling all over the nation looking for the Lord, it was Grandmother Jo who actually raised True Mother. This family wanted more than anyone else to know all the secrets of the spirit world. (573-262, 2007.08.24)

The wealthy man who built the Dallae Bridge in Jeongju at the time of the Joseon Dynasty was Jo Han-jun. He was Mother's maternal ancestor. There was a legend that the son of Heaven would be born through Jo Han-jun, but she was born as a daughter instead. There was also a prophecy that she would be born as a daughter, and because of it, a stone Maitreya statue came into existence on the hill in front of their home. The statue was so magical that, in the past, anyone who wished to climb over that hill on horseback had to get down from the horse and bow to it; otherwise his horse's hooves would get stuck to the ground and would not be able to move. (573-261, 2007.08.24)

True Mother's maternal grandmother, Jo Won-mo, was a direct descendant of Jo Han-jun. The character jo (趙) of her family name means "nation." It signifies that Dae Mo Nim's mother was in the position of a mother of the nation. That is the way the generations of her family tradition connected through history. Here is a true story: After no one had repaired or maintained the Dallae Bridge in Jeongju for many decades, it started to deteriorate. Eventually, it reached the point that people could not cross the bridge, and the road was blocked. Ruins of the broken bridge created an obstruction that caused the river to back up and overflow its banks, and it became buried under the sand and mud of the river. There was also a prophecy: If a rock carved like a totem pole that stood beside the bridge became buried, then the nation of Korea would fall, but if that rock was clearly exposed to the people, then a new heaven and earth would unfold in Korea. (455-261, 2004.06.26)

True Mother was born as a third-generation only daughter

For Mother to be born, there had to be three generations of only daughters, and, at the same time, those three generations had to have the foundation of having made preparations to receive the coming Lord. Thankfully, Mother's lineage is such that the three successive generations of her grandmother, her mother and Mother herself were all only daughters. (220-336, 1991.10.20)

Mother was born as the only daughter of three generations. Mother's grandmother was an only daughter, Mother's mother was also an only daughter, and Mother herself is an only daughter. These three generations all worked together to receive the Lord of the Second Advent. Mother had to be born as the culmination of three such generations. Otherwise, she could not have become the True Mother. Not just anyone can become True Mother. She has to emerge in accordance with the law of restoration through indemnity. (291-030, 1998.03.05)

Three generations of Mother's family made preparations to receive the Lord of the Second Advent. This can be traced back in history. They were opposed by Protestants and Catholics. Rev. Lee Yong-do was

severely persecuted for creating the New Jesus Church. Mother received a blessing after she became connected to the spiritual works and core believers of Korea. It was also important that she not have more than 12 people in her clan. (210-301, 1990.12.25)

Not just anyone can become the True Mother. The conditions in the providence to prepare someone to become True Mother were connected with providential relationships focused on the work to restore Eve. This required three women to meet internal and external conditions. On that basis, True Mother could appear before the Lord and be joined with him in marriage.

These three women were of three generations, representing the formation, growth and completion stages. The unity of grandmother, mother and daughter was like connecting the Old Testament Age, New Testament Age and Completed Testament Age. On that basis, it was possible for Heaven to inaugurate the era for establishing the True Parents. Among those women, True Mother is the center. The person representing the formation stage is not the center; nor is the person representing the growth stage. In the ages of history, all must pass through three stages. In the horizontal ages, all can stand on the level of perfection only with the fulfillment of the third stage -- the completion stage. (212-076, 1991.01.02)

Mother is the representative of all women in the world. A single woman representing all women had to be linked to another such single woman, who in turn would be connected to Mother. In other words, in the background behind her becoming True Mother, there had to be a connection of three generations. Originally True Parents should have been an only son and an only daughter. Adam was an only son, as was Jesus. From the perspective of God's Will, the Lord of the Second Advent is also like an only son. Since she has to help establish the will of the only son, Mother too must be the eldest and the only daughter. That is why, in the providence of restoration a man and a woman need to stand in complementary positions, become one, and rise above Satan's world to enter the Kingdom of Heaven together. (223-241, 1991.11.10)

The meaning of True Mother's name

True Mother's name is Hak Ja (鶴子). These characters mean "crane" and "son." Cranes fly over the Himalayas and then land on the plains, where they hatch their eggs. This symbolizes the mission that Eve is to fulfill. The character ja (子), meaning "son," symbolizes that she is the woman who yearns for the Son of God. True Mother's mission is to climb over the Himalayas and give birth to sons and daughters in the world of peace. Cranes do not eat just anything; they eat only clean things. They eat things that are nutritious but light. Once a crane starts to fly, it hardly changes direction as it flies high in the sky. For this reason, people in the East love cranes. (246-285, 1993.04.20)

Mother's name is Hak Ja, and why do you think it is Hak Ja? It could have been Hak Nyeo [woman, daughter], so why did it become Hak Ja? I thought, "Oh! They included the Chinese character ja (子), meaning 'son,' when they named her because they wanted to form a connection to the son of God." Because she originally was born as who she is, she was given her name. Han can represent Korea and even the universe. Han also means "one" and "the best." (120-274, 1982.10.17)

Mother's name is good. Hak Ja Han! For a woman to stand as a qualified object partner of Reverend Moon, she must be a scholar. Han can stand for the study of Chinese classics but also the study of the subject of sorrow. She must be a scholar who has studied about God more than anyone else. If a woman can achieve that, she will advance to the position of God's object partner without fail. That is why both Mother's given name and her surname are auspicious. And now she has attained such a position. (232-307, 1992.07.10)

Chapter 3: The Central Succession of Faith in Preparation for the Coming Lord

Spirit-led churches that prepared Heaven's new providence

In the land of Korea, God has been conducting spiritual work focusing on Christianity. Focusing on certain spirit-led Christian churches, God prepared a foundation in the 1930s and 1940s before Korea's liberation from Japan. To prepare to receive the Returning Lord, those Christian churches had to understand God's internal circumstances and attend His internal Will. God led this work through numerous families and pioneers. In Cheolsan, Pyongyang and Wonsan they did everything they could to prepare a good environment for the time of the Lord's return. Since Christianity was called to fulfill the Will to receive the Lord, God had these faithful believers prepare a spiritual environment to receive him. (028-058, 1970.01.03)

Among people doing this spiritual work was Rev. Kim Seong-do, who lived in Cheolsan. Another spiritual leader at that time was Rev. Baek Nam-ju from Hamheung, who was granted authorization by the Japanese governor-general's office in Korea to lead the Holy Lord Church. This was possible only because of guidance from the spirit world. The spirit world gave a message to Rev. Baek to walk barefoot

from Hamheung to Cheolsan and meet Rev. Kim. Although the distance was some 240 to 280 kilometers, he walked barefoot and met Rev. Kim. In this way, the spiritual foundations of the east and west sides of the Korean Peninsula were united. God prepared this foundation of unity so that the Returning Lord would not be persecuted when he arrived. That is how the Holy Lord Church (Seongju Gyo) was formed. Its name takes seong (聖), meaning "holy," from Kim Seong-do, and ju (主), meaning "the Lord," from Baek Nam-ju. However, a problem arose: Kim Seong-do viewed her position as higher than that of Baek Nam-ju and others. Kim Seong-do said, "Since I am the one whom Heaven taught about Eve's mission, I am the one who must attend the Lord when He comes." (223-211, 1991.11.10)

When Rev. Kim Seong-do and her family failed to fulfill their responsibility in her mission, it was transferred to a woman who faithfully attended her, Rev. Heo Ho-bin. Rev. Heo's whole life was focused on the Returning Lord. Heaven taught her how sin could be removed, how to live a daily life of attendance to the Lord, and how children should be raised after the Lord's coming. Rev. Heo set up all the necessary traditions for living in attendance to the Returning Lord. Rev. Heo had to make these preparations before Korea's liberation from Japan in 1945. The Principle of Restoration is such that she needed to do this work during the seven years prior to the liberation. Then, God's plan for the Returning Lord could have been fulfilled at the time of the liberation. The Messiah could have inherited the foundation that she had built and initiated a new history. Rev. Heo stood one level lower than the Returning Lord. She did not stand in the same position as the Lord; rather, she stood in the position of symbolically giving birth to him. Through her, the Lord could be born symbolically; this is according to the Principle of Restoration. Thus her mission symbolized that of Mary. (008-223, 1960.01.06)

True Mother inherited the foundation of devotion of the spirit-led churches

Mother's family was one that trusted in Heaven. Three generations of women, with Dae Mo Nim in the middle generation, were mobilized in order to attend the coming Lord. There were not many members in her family. So she grew up beautifully. Heaven gave Mother a strong will and ambition. The environment during the time she was growing up was quite difficult and lonely. Her mother, Dae Mo Nim, spent a lot of time traveling all over the Korean Peninsula, searching for the coming Lord, and went through a great deal of suffering in preparing to meet him. (585-184, 2008.01.30)

Dae Mo Nim's entire life of faith and devotion had only one objective. We must especially remember that from the beginning, she was part of the new providential work that included proclaiming that the Returning Lord would be born on earth as a human being. She participated in the new churches that God created for that purpose. Rev. Kim Seong-do, founder of the Holy Lord Church, was the first generation; another line was represented by Rev. Heo Ho-bin of the Inside the Womb Church. Their work laid the foundation that was bequeathed to True Mother. They formed the mainstream history from which Dae Mo Nim inherited the tradition of faith, but she was the first of these forerunners to actually attend the Returning Lord.

By giving birth to True Mother, Dae Mo Nim completed the work of these women who had labored through three generations to carry out the role of Eve. She made preparations discreetly, knowing that the Will would bear fruit in True Mother's generation. Words cannot describe all the hardships she endured. The many ordeals she had to bear throughout her life are beyond description. No one, not her siblings, her relatives or her friends, was ever able to understand her. As she walked her lonely path of faith, she even subsisted on raw pine needles. Yet her belief never changed and her faith never wavered as she established the foundation for True Mother to meet me. (265-009, 1994.11.07)

The Inside the Womb Church believed that the Returning Lord would come in the flesh, and that he would select his Bride and 12 disciples. Hence, the church trained its members in how to attend the Lord. True Mother was trained in that special spiritual group. The mother of the founder of that church called Mother when she was six and gave her a special blessing. When I met Mother, I realized that she already had received all the blessings necessary to become the Bride. Also, it was fitting that no men were involved in her spiritual preparation and that in her family she was the only daughter. (191-254, 1989.06.25)

Rev. Lee Yong-do was one of the representatives of Christianity who had been prepared to welcome the Returning Lord. When the existing Christian churches expelled him, he founded the New Jesus Church. He connected to Rev. Kim Seong-do in Cheolsan, at the time when Rev. Baek Nam-ju connected the spiritual churches on the eastern and western coasts of Korea. That is how, in Dae Mo Nim's family, her husband attended the New Jesus Church founded by a man, while Dae Mo Nim attended the Inside the Womb Church founded by a woman. Dae Mo Nim was a leading figure in that church. While Dae Mo Nim was attending the Inside the Womb Church, she even left her home to search all over for the Lord. She received blessings from the pastors of the New Jesus Church and also from the Inside the Womb Church. This is what I discovered when I looked into True Mother's family. It had to be that way. (403-239, 2003.01.23)

To attend the Messiah, Mother's mother made many conditions of devotion; Dae Mo Nim worked harder

than anyone else in Korea to meet the Coming Lord. She was a member of a church that said that the Lord would come in the flesh. Mother had this kind of Eve-like responsibility; she received many blessings through devout grandmothers who knew her family and who represented all of Korean history. (184-294, 1989.01.01)

Grandmother Hong received education from important leaders of the spirit-led churches that were preparing to meet the Returning Lord. Then, shortly before they came down to South Korea, Heo Ho-bin's mother blessed Mother, saying that she would become the Bride of Heaven. (220-337, 1991.10.20)

Rev. Kim Seong-do's church was on the west coast of North Korea. After she died, Rev. Heo Ho-bin became its leader. True Mother's mother, Dae Mo Nim, was a devout member of that church. She first brought Mother to that church when she was four years old, and Rev. Heo's mother gave her blessing to Mother when she was six. That blessing symbolized the bequeathal to Mother of the mission to attend the Returning Lord. When I first met Mother, I already knew about this succession. Everything that God had prepared was realized in 1960; that is how True Parents were able to emerge today. Based on this, it became possible to bestow the marriage Blessing on the church members so as to make them God's children. (052-186, 1971.12.29)

Chapter 4: True Mother Came as the Only Begotten Daughter

Heaven's only begotten son and only begotten daughter

The history of God's providence of restoration is a sorrowful history. The fact that God lost Adam and Eve is something to grieve over. The problem is that this loss did not end with those two individuals alone. Losing them meant losing their clan, and this lost clan has since expanded into peoples, nations and the world. By losing Adam and Eve, God lost them all. Thus, the loss of Adam and Eve meant that God's Kingdom and His sovereignty were lost. It meant the loss of God's family, God's clan and the people for His Kingdom. It meant the loss of the ideal of man and woman, the loss of God's only son and daughter. That is why the history of salvation, namely the history of the providence of restoration, is to recover one man and one woman, Adam and Eve. If Adam and Eve had not fallen but had prospered, today every single human being among the many billions of people on our planet would be registered in the Heavenly Kingdom. Everyone naturally would enter the Heavenly Kingdom as one family. (143-025, 1986.03.15)

Jesus' greatest teaching is that God is his Father and that he is God's only begotten son. The expression "only begotten son" indicates that he occupied the first love of God the Father; it means he stood in the position to receive that love. It is because Jesus stood in the position to proclaim, "I am God's only begotten son," that God had to make Christianity a worldwide religion. The term "only begotten son" emphasizes God's love. The only begotten son is the one who is connected to the fullness of God's first love for an individual. (138-256, 1986.01.24)

Four thousand years after the first ancestors, God's only begotten son in all of heaven and earth was born. This was blessed news. Before that, people had no way to make a bond of connection with God-centered true love. This had been a cause of bitter sorrow in people's hearts.

Now God's only begotten son [Sun Myung Moon] has appeared on earth! He has come as an intermediary for humankind, to dissolve that bitter sorrow. Had he not appeared, it would have been a serious situation. There can be no greater blessing than his coming. Therefore, all humankind and all of heaven and earth must be on his side, even the Creator. Anyone who blocks his way will come to ruin, while anyone who welcomes him will prosper. The appearance of the only begotten son is a joyful day for all humanity. God sends him first because history has been led by men. Once the only begotten son arrives, the only begotten daughter must then come. (023-149, 1969.05.18)

God exists as the vertical Parent, centering on true love. The vertical is a single line. When it meets a horizontal line, it creates a 90-degree angle where the two lines meet. Man is positioned on a line at a 90-degree angle to the vertical; woman is likewise positioned at a 90-degree angle; and the point where man and woman meet is at that same angle. There cannot be two different angles. The only begotten son is the first man in human history to receive God's love at a 90-degree angle. Someone must stand with him as God's only begotten daughter. The Messiah, who comes as the only begotten son, must find the only begotten daughter. Finding her is not a casual matter. Since God created Eve from the body of Adam, when the Messiah comes into the world he must find his Eve. He is the one who must recover Eve, because Eve was taken by Satan. Thus at his return, Jesus, as God's only begotten son, must receive God's only begotten daughter and establish a way for man and woman to meet at a 90-degree angle. Otherwise, the fundamental problems in heaven and on earth will never be solved. God has dual characteristics, and He can dwell only where the son and daughter are one. (185-186, 1989.01.08)

Jesus' purpose in coming again to earth is to find his Bride, a woman who is centered on God's love. That woman must represent Christianity, attend the Lord as her Bridegroom on the world-level stage of Christianity, and marry him. This establishes the realm of love of the Bridegroom and Bride. It is the

beginning of a realm of love that God can finally claim. Based on the realm of the only begotten son, God can claim the realm of the only begotten daughter. At the same time, centering on this only begotten son and only begotten daughter, He can inaugurate the realm of love of the Bridegroom and Bride. For the only begotten son and the only begotten daughter, it does not matter how large their nation is, or that it has a long history or an amazing cultural background. What matters is that their standard of conjugal love is such that they unite as husband and wife centering on God.

The first human beings lost this standard due to the Fall. Hence, without recovering it, everything in the world is in vain. Therefore, the only begotten son and the only begotten daughter on God's side must establish the realm of conjugal love as husband and wife. Once the realm of conjugal love is secured, the realm of children's love will be established naturally. (138-257, 1986.01.24)

Jesus said that he was God's only begotten son and that God was his Father. That claim indicates that, as an individual, he had received God's first love. Although God came to have His only begotten son, Jesus, He did not yet have His only begotten daughter. Jesus was unable to find her. Thus, Jesus must return to meet God's only begotten daughter, who can totally receive God's first love. That is why the Lord at his Second Advent must celebrate the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. That is, he is required to marry. This man who completely receives God's first love must marry a woman who completely receives God's first love, and they must start a family together, thus restoring the positions of unfallen Adam and Eve. (041-311, 1971.02.17)

The Messiah comes in the position of the original and direct son of God. With God's absolute love, he brings the seed of life. To find and raise such a son is God's primary purpose for conducting the providence of salvation throughout history. The Messiah comes to earth with nothing of earthly value. He has no nation. He has virtually nothing. He does not have a partner. Because Eve, Cain and Abel were lost, he does not have a family. That is why, when he comes, he has to recover them all. Christianity is the Bride religion and is to receive the Messiah who comes as its Bridegroom. The core truth of Christianity is amazing. Jesus called himself God's only begotten son. Adam was intended to be God's only begotten son, and Eve was intended to be God's only begotten daughter. However, due to the Fall, they did not become the only begotten son and daughter. Satan claimed the only begotten daughter. God's entire creation was ruined and must be regained. As God created Eve based on Adam, God must re-create Eve by the seed that He sends through the new son of God. (285-024, 1997.04.19)

In the Garden of Eden, Adam was God's only begotten son and Eve was God's only begotten daughter. Singing together a song of spring -- "Brother, you are special to me!" and "Sister, you are so beautiful!" -- they should have grown to maturity and blossomed in the springtime of their lives. At that point, what would God have done? When they were fully in bloom, emitting their unique fragrances, God would have held a beautiful wedding to join them together. Then Adam and Eve would have realized God's supreme ideal of creation. But before this, God's only begotten son and only begotten daughter first needed time to grow until they were fully mature. (159-195, 1968.05.10)

Jesus called himself God's only begotten son. The only begotten son needs the only begotten daughter. Jesus was to embark on the path to save the world, but he could not do it alone. He needed to establish his family as the foundation. Jesus' purpose in claiming to be God's only begotten son was to unite the world and reign over it. Yet, before he could do so, he first had to form a family of his own. However, he could not do that in his lifetime. Therefore, in order for the Messiah to save humankind on earth, he must form a model family for others to emulate. Jesus needed to have a family before he could try to save Israel. Jesus was God's only begotten son. I am sure that if Jesus' wedding had taken place, God would have been its officiator. The greatest purpose of God's providence of salvation is to build the family that He can love. For this purpose, Jesus, God's only begotten son, and a specially prepared woman, God's only begotten daughter, were to grow in God's love while attending Him as their Father and then receive His blessing at their marriage. In this way, they were to establish the foundation to become the true ancestors of humankind. All of this was lost and must be recovered. (159-192, 1968.05.10)

The title "God's only begotten son" was finally fulfilled after Jesus came to earth. For the first time since Adam and Eve failed and human history was lost to Satan, God's only son, born of His lineage, lived on earth. This was Jesus, the man who received God's love. Yet, even though Jesus emerged as God's only begotten son, the only begotten daughter did not appear. The emergence of God's perfected only begotten son after 4,000 years of the history of salvation was as if God had created Adam again. In the Garden of Eden, God created Eve, modeling her after Adam. He made her based on the same principle and blueprint He employed when creating Adam, so that she could be his partner. When it states in the Bible that the woman was made from Adam's rib, it means that God created her with the essence of Adam. That is why perfected Adam, God's only begotten son, can recover Eve, the one who has been lost to this day. In Jesus, God found the Adam who could establish His direct lineage of true love, but He was not yet able to find Eve. In order to find Eve, fallen human history had to be rectified within a family, and a nation had to be engrafted with that family. Preparation for this began with Jacob, from whom emerged the 12 tribes of Israel. Based on the faith of the chosen people, their descendants expanded the scope of God's victory in the world. Over the course of 2,000 years, they formed the nation of Israel and established Judaism, both

of which were prepared for the coming of Jesus. (347-171, 2001.07.04)

Jesus called fallen human beings to become God's sons and daughters, but what was most remarkable was that he proclaimed himself God's only begotten son. In a world where humanity had been paying indemnity continually over thousands of years of history, this concept -- God's only begotten son -- was a sensation. What Jesus had to do next was to change the human lineage by reversing the positions of Cain and Abel between himself and Judaism, and between himself and the nation of Israel. However, he was not able to do that. Hence, although he recovered the title of God's only begotten son, he was not able to meet God's only begotten daughter. She had been prepared, but Jesus could not meet her without a tribal-level foundation. Beginning from Jesus' family, links connecting the individual to the family and the tribe had to be established, so that the lineage of humankind eventually could be changed. (164-256, 1987.05.17)

In order for Jesus to have a family foundation, he should have received his Bride -- the woman who came as the embodiment of the Holy Spirit. Had he received that woman who embodied the Holy Spirit, he could have worked freely on the horizontal level. However, Jesus was able to set this condition only spiritually, because his three core disciples failed to meet the standard of becoming his sons. This was Jesus' bitter sorrow. Since people on earth were not able to make an adequate indemnity condition, Jesus had to ascend to heaven prematurely. Man represents heaven and woman represents earth. Jesus, the True Father of humankind, has been in heaven. The Holy Spirit is the True Mother of humankind. Therefore, the Holy Spirit must come to earth in the flesh. However, God's only begotten daughter was not able to emerge at the time of Jesus, and that Will could not be fulfilled. (023-176, 1969.05.18)

The term "Holy Spirit" refers to the spiritual mother. Jesus, in unity with the Holy Spirit, multiplied spiritual children and laid the worldwide foundation that is Christianity. Yet, since this Christian foundation was laid only spiritually, it is not enough to fulfill God's Will both spiritually and physically. Thus, we come to the conclusion that Jesus must return. It is inevitable, because the physical world remains imperfect. Unless the spiritual foundation of Christianity is connected to the foundation that the Lord at his Second Coming builds in the physical world, we cannot go beyond our current history and begin a new history, that of God's world, in the spirit and the flesh. (073-241, 1974.09.22)

True Mother, the only begotten daughter and the substantial Holy Spirit

Jesus, the center of Christianity, is the Bridegroom. He receives his Bride at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb refers to the wedding of two human beings in the flesh: a man and a woman in the positions of Jesus and the Holy Spirit. For Christians, God is the Father and Jesus is the son. The Holy Spirit is the mother spirit. Thus, by receiving the Holy Spirit, we are reborn. We must be given rebirth by the Holy Spirit. Human beings are born through their parents' unity in love. This is natural law. Jesus is the father; the Holy Spirit is the mother. In other words, Jesus is the Bridegroom and the Holy Spirit is the Bride. When the Holy Spirit comes into your heart, if your yearning heart unites with the Holy Spirit's yearning heart for Jesus, you will be enraptured. The spirit of love from the spiritual True Parents -- Jesus and the Holy Spirit -- will then infuse you with new life. This is what Christianity calls rebirth. (019-202, 1968.01.07)

The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where men and women enter together with their families. However, when Jesus came to earth, he could not find his Bride, and he died without being able to have children. Hence, to this day he remains in Paradise, where for 2,000 years he has been praying and working through the Holy Spirit. In the beginning, a woman first committed sin. Therefore, the Holy Spirit, a feminine spirit, must come to the world as an actual woman and cleanse that sin. This will happen when Jesus comes again to the world as the Bridegroom and furnishes the new seed. Through reviving Jesus' mission, God's purpose is to build a new, God-centered world based on the lineage of the True Parents of the new heaven and earth. When that world becomes manifest, we can say that God's Will has been fulfilled as planned. (021-199, 1968.11.20)

We live in a time when women can move the world for God's providence of restoration. This indicates that the time has come when Eve can emerge to restore the world. This Eve is the embodiment of the Holy Spirit and the representative of all women on earth. She must become a true wife and a true mother; then she must become a true queen. Therefore, she will be equipped with the qualities to become such a person. Her character will be such that she can take responsibility for all three of these roles, and more. God has sought such a woman, who can become a true mother, a true wife, a true queen, and more. Once God calls her, this woman should be able to reject Satan's world and march bravely forward. (093-040, 1977.05.01)

The Unification Church is the first parent-type religion. Religion began with the servant religion and has progressed to the adopted-child religion, the stepchild religion, the son and daughter religion, and then the mother religion. God has been ever looking for the mother. God, the masculine subject partner, has had no partner. He needs a female object partner. She is His partner, and at the same time she is the queen of earth. She is the queen of the tribes and queen of the families. She stands as the grandmother of all

ancestors, the mother of all humankind, the wife of God and the daughter of God. Mother is such a woman, with the value of the original True Mother. She is the queen of heaven, the queen of earth, the queen of the nation, the grandmother to her ancestors, the mother of humankind, the wife of God and the daughter of God. Mother's value is found in all of these roles. (398-134, 2002.12.09)

Now that the True Parents have emerged on earth, Jesus is united with True Father and the Holy Spirit with True Mother. Jesus' mother, Mary, and John the Baptist's mother, Elizabeth, did not cooperate with each other; this was a contributing cause of Jesus' death. The nation of Israel and the leaders of Judaism should have supported Jesus, and, in particular, they should have found Jesus' Bride. Then Jesus and his Bride could have given rebirth to humankind. What could not be done in Jesus' time on the national level must be indemnified, this time on the world-level stage. It is True Mother's work to reach the world level; then the work must be expanded horizontally. That is why Mother is traveling and being proclaimed throughout the world. It is because every human being must return to True Mother's womb and become one with True Father, like the joining of ovum and sperm, and be reborn. (235-252, 1992.09.20)

What is the fundamental restoration? It is giving birth again after purifying the bloodline. In short, it means rebirth. Originally, if human beings had not fallen, they would have been the sons and daughters who existed within Adam's bone marrow as seeds of life before he was married, and which then would have become one with the mother, following which children would have been born through her womb. Then they would have expanded to become a family, tribe, people, nation and world. (235-240, 1992.09.20)

When the mother in substantial form appears, the condition is established that the sons and daughters, who had spiritually gone into their father, are born again as that couple's children through the mother's womb. This is how they can cease being illegitimate children and become children of the central lineage who can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. That is fundamental restoration. You need to know that I must carry out fundamental restoration, not conditional restoration. (235-255, 1992.09.20)

What does the Lord of the Second Advent come to do on earth? Since the era of the Second Advent is the era of the standard of completion, the Lord of the Second Advent comes to find the mother of humankind. In short, he comes to find his Bride. The Bride that the Lord, the Groom, is trying to find on this earth is not a Bride from within the fallen realm. He is looking for the one who was born from an unfallen, pure lineage. Then, on what kind of foundation should the Bride -- that is, the Mother -- be born? She must be born on the foundation of the Abel-type mother in the fallen world. Therefore, your mother stands in the position of the fallen Eve, and the mother who comes next stands in the position of Mary in Jesus' era. And the mother who comes after that is the one who can fulfill the Will of the Blessing under the protection of Mary in the time of Jesus. In other words, she is a virgin who has nothing to do with the ties of sin and so can advance to the position of the mother of humankind. (035-218, 1970.10.19)

You should know how intense the course of restoring Mother was. The history of restoring Adam was one of unending changes and innumerable struggles and bloodshed. Similarly, much sacrifice had to be made in the course of restoring Mother. People who were prepared after receiving revelations thousands of years ago continued to carry the standard for Mother, generation after generation, until the present age. It was like lighting a new candle with an old one, again and again. The holy flame was guarded so that it never went out but continued to burn, candle after candle, until the Last Days of the world. You have no idea how much sacrifice was made in that process. (264-056, 1994.10.09)

What kind of process should be undergone by the person who is to become Mother? The answer is not a simple one. Every condition had to be met. The conditions had to be satisfied front and back, left and right, and up and down. I did not find and establish Mother just because she has a pretty face. The first condition was the question of what bloodline she was born from. Whether she was born of a bloodline that can be accused by Satan or of a bloodline that can rise above his accusation was very important. (170-031, 1987.11.01)

For one to become Mother, three generations of her family had to live alone. Mother was an only daughter who grew up by herself without anyone's support when she was young. She was born as an only daughter in order to eliminate the bloodline of Satan. Mother's mother was an only daughter, whose mother was also an only daughter. The three generations are all involved. That is why Mother had to go through the suffering of three generations. Do you think Mother was well taken care of, that her diapers were changed on time, and she was fed well, when her own mother and grandmother were so engrossed in their faith that they were always away? They walked the path of absolute obedience and absolute submission to God, with single-hearted devotion and complete disregard for the care of their physical bodies, which means that Mother never knew the tender affections of the human world but learned only about her duties and love for Heaven. (195-147, 1989.11.07)

Father cannot marry recklessly. He must receive as his Bride the daughter who has passed through the history of three generations of Eve. Mother has passed through such a history. Having attended the Holy Lord Church and the Inside the Womb Church, she received the blessings of the first Eve and the second

Eve. Such is the history she underwent with the support of Dae Mo Nim. In accordance with the laws of restoration through indemnity, she has the responsibility to pass through such a process and thus establish the domain of victory for the coming Lord. (265-153, 1994.11.20)

Part 2: The Holy Wedding and the Path of the Bride of Heaven

Outline of True Mother's Life 2: The Holy Wedding and the Path of the Bride of Heaven

After the Fall of Adam and Eve, God sent His only begotten son and only begotten daughter to finish the work of the providence of restoration. With His blessing, God's only begotten son and only begotten daughter were joined together in the Holy Wedding, the Marriage Supper of the Lamb recorded in Chapter 19 of the Book of Revelation, and became the True Parents. Thereupon, it became possible for people to multiply the lineage of goodness through the True Parents, and thus a turning point was reached in the providence of salvation.

For that to happen, True Father -- who came as the third Adam, following the first Adam and Jesus, the second Adam -- had to find and receive True Mother, who is the third Eve, the Holy Spirit in substantial form and the Bride, and together they had to become the True Parents and give birth to sons and daughters free from original sin. Following that, those who have undergone a change of lineage through True Parents' Blessing become the family of God's lineage, which then expands until the ideal world is ultimately realized. The Holy Wedding of True Parents conducted on April 11, 1960, was a historic event on the cosmic level. True Father representing heaven and True Mother representing earth became one, and the divided heaven and earth were finally reconnected.

A life of preparation to become the Bride of Heaven

Before the Holy Wedding could be held, True Father had to indemnify all the responsibilities that the central figures in the history of the providence of restoration had failed to fulfill. In other words, because the first ancestors, Adam and Eve, fell while they were still in the completion stage of the growth period and were yet to reach maturity, True Father had to walk a course of indemnity for 14 years after Korea regained its independence. This was the period in which he had to pass through seven years of the formation stage of the Old Testament Age and seven years of the growth stage of the New Testament Age on the national level, and connect them to the completion stage. On this foundation, True Parents' Holy Wedding was solemnized.

God sent the Lord of the Second Advent as His only begotten son and continued to prepare His only begotten daughter as the Bride of Heaven. Starting from a young age, True Mother received several spiritual testimonies from those around her to the effect that she would become the Bride of Heaven. About a month after True Mother was born, Hong Soon-ae received a vision within her dream in which Kim Seong-do of the Holy Lord Church came to her upon white clouds, dressed all in white, and said to her, "This baby is the Lord's daughter, and you are only her nanny. Feed her and raise her well." True Mother also attended the Inside the Womb Church together with Dae Mo Nim and offered devotions, and during that period of time the mother of Rev. Heo Ho-bin blessed True Mother, who was then six years old, with the words, "She will become the Bride of Heaven." This signified that the devotional foundation of all spiritual works had been connected through Dae Mo Nim and passed on to True Mother.

The three generations of Grandmother Jo Won-mo, Hong Soon-ae and True Mother were one in heart, thereby connecting the three ages of the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament. Through these three generations, True Mother's family worked continuously and prepared a foundation on the family level to receive the Lord of the Second Advent and give birth to the Bride of Heaven. True Mother's maternal line was consecrated and brought over to Heaven's side through three generations of only daughters, and the conditions of faith were established by which they could rise above Satan's accusations.

As can be seen, True Mother inherited the devotional foundation of the preparatory work for the Second Advent that had been undertaken centering on spirit-led Christian groups in Korea. Moreover, on the foundation laid by her family to receive the Lord of the Second Advent, from a young age True Mother naturally became accustomed to practicing a religious life of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and thus established a personal foundation of conditions to become Heaven's Bride.

In the early part of 1960, True Father appeared in her dreams, and she also received a special revelation from Heaven, "The day is near, so be prepared." True Mother prayed with a heart of complete self-renunciation and entrusted everything to the decision of the providence. She responded with the simple words, "I have lived in accordance with the Will until now. Whatever God's Will may be, whatever the purpose of Your providence may be, I will do anything You command me to do as Your servant."

On February 26, 1960, True Mother had a private interview with True Father during which, over the course of nine hours, they spoke about many things.

True Parents' Engagement Ceremony and Holy Wedding

True Parents' engagement ceremony was held on March 27, 1960, or the 1st day of the 3rd lunar month, at four o'clock in the morning at the headquarters church in Cheongpa-dong. The engagement ceremony was the ceremony by which the Heavenly Mother came to dwell on earth. In other words, the Mother of Heaven came to settle down on earth through it. Through this engagement ceremony, the Holy Spirit that had been in the spirit world finally could become completely one with True Mother on earth. Mother could then join together with True Father, and they became husband and wife.

On this day, the first ceremony was conducted in several parts: Part one was the celebration of the "Second Advent in Korea." Part two was about the "union of the incorporeal Father and the substantial father." Part three was the ceremony for the "presentation of the crown of laurels," and part four was the ceremony for the "presentation of the royal crown." This was followed by the second ceremony, in which representatives of 27 different fields of endeavor offered bows and presented wedding gifts in turn.

At the engagement ceremony True Father prayed, "Heaven, please raise high the banner of victory; and earth, return the rewards of joy to Father. Glory, glory, infinite glory; we know that this is a moment when heaven and earth can join in returning joy to You, so please allow all our descendants of all generations to come to cherish this moment of joy."

At 10 o'clock in the morning of April 11, 1960, the 16th day of the 3rd lunar month, the historic Holy Wedding of True Parents was solemnized at the headquarters church. The first part of the ceremony was the "ceremony of the parents of restoration through indemnity." True Mother, wearing a white Korean traditional dress and a long veil, and with beautiful bridal makeup, walked down the stairs from the second-floor arm in arm with True Father and ascended the ceremonial stage. After True Father's prayer and declaration, a laudatory address was delivered and a poem of praise recited. The second part of the ceremony was the "ceremony of the parents of glory." True Father and True Mother pledged themselves to God, bowed four times to everyone present, then bowed to each other three times, after which they exchanged rings and bowed once to each other, thus ending the main part of the ceremony.

True Father next swore an oath, "We will fulfill our mission as the original parents and the True Parents who can represent our Father's glory." Then both True Father and True Mother raised their hands and gave a benediction, and the ceremony was concluded. The wedding reception continued for five hours, including a grand luncheon. At the time, True Mother revealed her feelings with her words: "There are no words to express the heart of God. I pledge to unite with you in heart and in every other way, and to march forward until the day the Will is realized." She later said that, at that time, she made the resolution over and over again in her heart, "I will realize God's Will during my lifetime at all costs."

Through the Holy Wedding, True Parents were elevated to the position of God's substantial object partners, and by giving birth to the True Children, they completed the four-position foundation. They also brought true love, true life and true lineage to settlement on earth centering on the Heavenly Parent, thus establishing the condition for expanding the family, tribe, people, nation and world on this earth and preparing the basis for the ideal of eternal peace. Through the Holy Wedding, the foundation was created through which all people could be restored through True Parents, becoming direct descendants of the lineage of Heavenly Parent.

Chapter 1: The Marriage Supper of the Lamb and the Path of the Heavenly Bride

The Marriage Supper of the Lamb

Originally Jesus needed a Bride. He needed to find a woman who was living in accordance with the laws of creation. Since Jesus is in the position of Adam, he must find the lost Eve, for only then can he marry. Jesus, however, failed to find Eve. Because he died while he was still in the process of looking for her, Jesus must come again. He must come again and be married. The concept that Jesus is to marry is based on Christian thought.

That is why the Lord of the Second Advent must hold the marriage feast when he comes. You hold a marriage feast when you are getting married. In order to perform the marriage feast -- that is, the Marriage Supper of the Lamb -- there must be a Bride centered on Jesus. In other words, he needs to find the Bride. That Bride is none other than Eve, the Eve who was with Adam before the Fall. Jesus is the second Adam, and the Lord who comes next is the third Adam. That is why the third Adam must come in the position of the unfallen Adam and find the unfallen Eve. He must find the unfallen Eve and perform the Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

Adam and Eve, who were supposed to become the parents of humankind, fell and thus became evil parents. That is why we can be restored when we come to have good, unfallen parents. Humankind needs parents of goodness. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb must be performed in order that a man and a

woman ascend to the position of good parents. This is a core concept of Christian thought. (036-263, 1970.12.06)

The first human ancestors were to start as good parents, but instead they started as evil parents. Hence, all human beings were born from the lineage of evil parents. The first human beings were supposed to directly receive God's complete love as if it were meant for them alone. Having been born as God's son and daughter, they were to remain so and live in God's bosom, born of His direct lineage and thus related to Him by blood. But this did not happen. This is why humankind must regain the state of the original ideal. For this, we need the Marriage Supper of the Lamb at which we welcome the Bridegroom and the Bride. This means that the Lord who is to return must come to earth as the Bridegroom. He must find the Bride and engraft her onto the standard of Jesus, the standard that Christianity upholds. Christianity is the religion that firmly pursues its purpose based on the standard of Jesus. This is why the democratic world is advancing on the basis of Christian values. The democratic world is advancing in this way in order to receive the True Parents. Religion to this day has been toiling to establish the one true son. This means that God has been endeavoring to find the one true son. (041-028, 1971.02.12)

The reason the Bible is the greatest among the scriptures of the many religions is that it introduces God as the Father, the Parent of humankind. This is the foundation of the Christian faith. Next, it refers to Jesus as God's only begotten son. The phrase "God's only begotten son" means that Jesus is the first person who could receive the fullness of God's love. Another point is that the Bible introduces the concept of the Bride. Jesus, God's only begotten son, came as the Bridegroom. Hence, he needs his Bride. Since there is the Bridegroom, there also must be the Bride. The Bridegroom and Bride are a man and a woman. On the day of their wedding banquet, God can finally appear holding the banner of love. God hoped to see such a banquet in the Garden of Eden. This hope was shattered; hence in the Last Days this wedding banquet must be held on earth. (135-125, 1985.10.04)

Jesus said, "I am the Son of God," "God is my Father," and "I am the only begotten son." The only begotten son is the prince of Heaven who can receive God's first love. Among God's sons, he is the only one who can receive God's first love and receive it in its fullness. Next, there must be the only begotten daughter. The Bridegroom is the only begotten son; the Bride is the only begotten daughter. They must wed; this is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. This means that when the Lord comes, he will have his wedding banquet and then raise a family. This is what God has desired ever since the creation of Adam and Eve. God's hope is for the only begotten son and the only begotten daughter to build a God-centered family, a family in which He can manifest His love in a real way. (160-272, 1969.05.17)

The Bible states that in the Last Days, the Messiah will come and conduct the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, at which time a man and a woman join together as husband and wife, forging a bond in God's lineage. Once they emerge as the True Parents of humankind, Satan cannot continue to exist. These two people, a man and a woman who are bonded to God's lineage, are the embodiments of God the Father and the Mother, and God's original internal character and original external form. The True Parents of humankind are motivated by God's love and move by the power of God's life. When they join together in complete union, God's love, life and lineage will be coursing through them. Each becomes the owner of the other with their positions constantly changing: the man in the position of the woman and the woman in the position of the man. At that point, the seeds of life, namely, their descendants, will be connected to God. This is the ideal of creation. However, due to the Fall this ideal had been shattered. In order to recover the lost ideal of creation, True Parents need to recover all that was lost. In doing so, True Parents represent all creation, represent humankind, and represent our Heavenly Parent. This is the essence of the providence of salvation. (325-131, 2000.06.30)

The original human beings were not supposed to fall. They were supposed to receive God's blessing at the right time and within the right environment to become the true ancestors of humankind. However, they failed to do so and instead became the fallen ancestors. Thus, the good ancestor, free from the Fall, should appear in front of all humankind. He is the one who can become the True Father to all in the spiritual world and the physical world. Christianity calls this person the Lord at the Second Advent. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb is the banquet to which the returning Jesus comes as the True Father to join with a woman who can be the True Mother, bringing forth the True Parents. This is the core truth of Christianity. The center of Christianity is Jesus, and the center of Jesus is love. The center of the Bible is also love. The center of love is the Bride and Bridegroom, and the center of the Bride and Bridegroom is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. The paramount significance of the Marriage Supper of the Lamb is that the Returning Lord and his Bride receive the marriage Blessing at the time of God's choosing and in the right environment, whereby they become the true ancestors of humankind who can inherit heaven and earth. (009-254, 1960.06.05)

God has been looking for the persons who can represent Adam and Eve whom God had lost. The Bible calls Jesus the Second Adam. It calls Adam the tree of life. Thus, Jesus is the one who came in place of the tree of life that had been lost. However, he could not complete his original mission, because he was not able to welcome the day of his wedding when both God and the Son could rejoice. That is why he left earth with the promise that he would return. The day will arrive when God and Jesus rejoice together. The

day will come when they can openly express their hearts filled with 6,000 years of bitter pain and sorrow. The day will come when the coming Lord can establish the bond of lineage linking God to His sons and daughters. Suppose that when Jesus came to earth as God's only begotten son, he had not died on the cross. Since he was God's only begotten son, God surely would have sent His only begotten daughter to him. God has searched for 2,000 years to find the Bride. Jesus emerged as the true son, but there is no mention of a true daughter. God's Will, therefore, could not be realized. The purpose of the 2,000-year history of Christianity, therefore, has been to find God's daughter. The Holy Spirit came but could represent this daughter of God only in spirit. God's bitter sorrow over this matter will be dissolved on the day that the Marriage Supper of the Lamb takes place. (007-303, 1959.10.11)

Religion up to now has been seeking for the one ideal man and the one ideal woman. Through religion, God has been looking for the one man and the one woman of whom He could say, "I love these, my children, with all of my love." The Bridegroom and the Bride in Christianity refer to God's Will to seek throughout the world for the only begotten son and the only begotten daughter who can receive God's love in its fullness. When He finds that perfected man and perfected woman, God brings them together and holds a wedding banquet; from that point, a new world can unfold. That is why on his return the Lord must find the Bride and hold the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. (041-027, 1971.02.12)

If the first human beings had not fallen, they would have borne sons and daughters without original sin and established a family that could directly enter the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven. They would have stood as the True Parents. Their family would have been one with God. Their sons and daughters would have been the offspring of God's family. However, the first family in Genesis did not fulfill the Will to establish that family; that is why, in the Book of Revelation, St. John raised the issue of establishing the Bride and the Bridegroom. The Bridegroom is the one who comes as the perfected True Father, and the Bride is the one who appears as the True Mother, the beloved of God. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have married centered on God, but due to the Fall they married centered on Satan. True Parents must reclaim Adam and Eve on behalf of God, and then conduct the Holy Wedding centered on God. This is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb that is spoken of in the Book of Revelation. (053037, 1972.02.06)

On the day when two people, a filial son of God and a filial daughter of God, can stand before God as the Bridegroom and Bride for the first time since the creation of heaven and earth, God will say to them, "You have worked so hard to come here seeking Heaven's heart and the heart of the Heavenly Parent, even amid all the adversity on earth!" He will then give His blessing to this couple and install them as the True Parents who represent the incorporeal God in physical form. Such is the cosmic banquet, the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb is offered based on the Bridegroom and Bride having become a true filial son and daughter, with the true Bride having understood the Will and having pledged herself to it. From the day they receive the Blessing, they become the True Parents of humankind who represent the incorporeal God in substantial form. If the first human beings had not fallen, they would have grown up in a good world and received the Blessing in the love of God. Adam and Eve would have become children who could intimately know God's heart. In their loving union, they would have made a bond of heart with God that would have enabled God to say to them, "You are My filial son and daughter, and you can represent My heart." The new Adam and Eve cannot become God's filial son and daughter unless they feel connected to Him in heart. Thus, they need to understand God's inner heart and the course through which He suffered. By doing so, they can meet the conditions required of Adam and Eve for realizing the ideal of creation. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb is precisely the event through which those conditions are met. (009-107, 1960.04.24)

The path of the Bride of Heaven

If it were not for God's Will, I never would have met Mother. I met her because that is what the Will ordained. The person who was to become Mother had to be no more than 20 years of age. Originally, she could not be older than 18, not even by a day. Since Eve fell at the age of 16, she has to pass through three years until the age of 19. (231-024, 1992.05.31)

The True Parents' Holy Wedding in 1960 was not conducted on my own initiative. God gave me revelation after revelation, insisting, "The time has come, My son. You shall prepare the altar to receive holy matrimony, and I shall bless you." This is the principled way. (093-059, 1977.05.01)

There are many queens who have passed over to the next world, and all of them bow their heads to True Mother in respect. What is True Mother's greatest pride? It is her clean, unspoiled purity. She is a woman of purity. She was born in a lineage of devout Christians who lived in utmost devotion to their religion for three generations. This is like a pure, unopened bud in the standard of all values. She is the ideal bride that religion has sought, the best bride, the most beautiful bride. She is surrounded by the fragrance of beauty. (572-146, 2007.08.16)

The condition was that she be totally obedient and sacrificial for her husband, giving total love. If she had had everything in life and a big family, she very easily could have become arrogant. But she could not say

that her father or her elder brother were better than her husband. She could not even consider any comparison. She could not think that any man, whether her grandfather or any teacher or professor, was better than her husband. In the garden of Eden, Eve had only one choice. There were no other men around, and she was to focus on just one man, Adam. This is why I picked an innocent young lady like Mother. Before I was a husband to her, I was a father to her and also an elder brother to her. That was for restoration. Eve should be restored in that sequence. She lost God, her Father, so she first must be restored to God and her father. Adam was supposed to be her elder brother when they were growing up, so next, she must be restored to her brother, then to her husband. (097-296, 1978.03.26)

The archangel, who was a servant, caused Eve to fall, overturning everything. Hence, restoration must begin from the position of a servant. That is because we must possess greater love than Satan, who is the owner, in order to find the Bride. The Bride can be found only after a foundation has been prepared through which Eve can reject everything about herself and say, "I will follow you, even if I have to die."

That partner is a woman, but what kind of woman is she? She is the woman who can become a bride among women. Among women, there are motherly women and daughterly women. They represent Leah and Rachel. This happens not due to the desire of the coming Groom, but as part of the providence that must take place in accordance with the heavenly principle.

However, the mother, in the position of a servant, must carefully raise her daughter. If the mother is a servant, what becomes of the daughter? She becomes a servant's daughter. An inheritance ceremony, therefore, is needed for the servant's daughter to be registered as God's daughter. Only through this ceremony can the Bride be designated in front of the returning Lord, the Groom, and a new proclamation be made. That happened in 1960. (044-309, 1971.05.24)

True Mother's mother (Dae Mo Nim) walked a historic path of suffering to receive the Returning Lord. During that time Mother, as her daughter, also received such training. I needed a woman who, as a wife, would follow with all of her heart and mind a husband who was totally committed to the Will. I also needed her to be from a prepared family and lineage. Thinking in this way, I chose True Mother. (121-213, 1982.10.27)

Before coming to the Unification Church, Dae Mo Nim had walked a course during which she attended three persecuted churches: the New Jesus Church, then the Holy Lord Church and the Inside the Womb Church. Her history of attending these three churches before meeting me qualified her lineage to be the lineage from which True Mother could come. Before Dae Mo Nim gave birth to True Mother, she based her life on commands she had received from Heaven. There were spiritual works like this going on in the background. I could not choose just anyone to be in the position of True Mother. (539-060, 2006.09.17)

In order to produce True Mother, a family of three generations had to offer themselves representing the three ages: the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament Ages. The family had to have a line of only daughters. After True Mother was conceived, Dae Mo Nim set out on the path by herself. Through history, three ages had sought for the pure Bridegroom. These three women representing the three ages had to raise up the pure Bride by carrying the cross over many hills. Not just anyone can be chosen as the True Mother. To True Mother, I, True Father, stood as her grandfather and father as well as her husband, and also as her older brother. So when she related to me, she regarded me as her older brother, as her father, as her grandfather and even as her king. Knowing this, I had to raise her starting from the position of a younger sister. I had to elevate her to the position of my fiancée, then to the position of my wife, and then to the positions of mother and grandmother, all the way to the position of queen. (484-085, 2005.01.20)

Everyone cannot help but respect True Mother. She emerged after passing through three spiritual churches. Over and over, she heard from her mother that the Lord will come in the future, and that when she meets him, she must attend him this way and that. Dae Mo Nim repeatedly taught her so many times that her teaching infused into Mother's bone marrow. This is how she was educated to become True Mother. This daughter, who was 17 years old when she was blessed to me, must become the queen. She must advance to the position of the queen of the Heavenly Kingdom. Therefore, after our Holy Wedding she had to pass through the positions of wife, mother and grandmother, and rise up to the position of queen. When I refer to her as True Mother, it is because she is the mother who represents the heavenly nation. When I say she is my wife, it means that she represents the king and therefore must be attended as if one is attending the king. (593-216, 2008.06.16)

Chapter 2: The Engagement Ceremony and the Holy Wedding

The Engagement Ceremony

To remedy the mistake made by the human ancestors Adam and Eve, You established tens of thousands of people in the course of 6,000 long years. However, we know only too well that those heavenly workers, whom You had sent down to earth after entrusting Your very heart and soul to them, did nothing

but betray, ostracize, curse and blame You. You also have overlooked any betrayals that we, their descendants of today, have committed and kept an unchanging heart, refraining from shedding tears of sorrow as You overcame difficult crisis after crisis and climbed precarious hill after hill. Therefore, we should become sons and daughters who can open our hearts to You and be grateful to You.

We have raised our weak hands to Heaven, with our hearts overflowing with earnestness, and called out to You, our Heavenly Father, over and over again, so please allow us to realize the earnest wish of our heart. You know that we are the Unification group who share the heart of Heaven and who wish to see, hear and live with You and never leave You. This group of people was not connected through secular means; they made their way here because human beings were born after receiving heavenly love and they wish to find their way back to the original hometown of their fatherland. We can keenly feel every movement of our flesh and blood, and the beating of the heart resonating in our chest, and we know that they represent the heart of 1,000 years at this very moment.

This is not a time of sorrow, but one in which we cannot help but appeal to You and cry out loud in sheer joy because we are unable to suppress this earnestness overflowing in our hearts. Therefore, Heavenly Father, please free Yourself from the hard work You have carried out until now as You led me for the past 40 years of my life. Please know that everything that has been done to find the name of True Parents was done for Heaven, because I knew, before anyone else, how lonely You were and how much unfairness You had suffered. Your son and daughter, who stand here concerned about Your Will, will dedicate the rest of their lives to achieve Your Will. So, Father, we truly hope and pray that You will not let us become Your son and daughter who commit a fault in any way in front of Heaven, regardless of whether we live or die.

We know that Your path grows lonelier with every step, and Your steps are such that Your worry grows with each one You take. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will allow this day to be the one that You have sought for 6,000 years, and that You will let this day be recorded in history as the day on which Your new undertaking was established in front of the entire universe.

Heavenly Father, we have come to learn that when You set a date and time, You never let that appointed time be missed in Your plans and Your work. Those of us gathered here today stand in the position where we can shed tears of sorrow filling up our hearts for Heaven and offer words of gratitude to You. However, there still remain the 30 million people of Korea who are still fettered to the authority of utter darkness, as well as the 2.8 billion lives on this earth who are in the realm of death and do not know where to go, and we need to take responsibility for them. Therefore, please give us energy if we lack energy, and abilities if we lack abilities.

Please establish this one day as a day of victory, and please appear above all created things in heaven and on earth so that they can completely set the condition for liberation and appeasement of sorrow, for which You long have sought. We are grateful that this is the time when we can conclude our victory over the satanic world. We know that at this very point in time, we are raising the banner of victory and Satan is tasting the sorrow of defeat, and thus we have exchanged lives with those on the other side. Therefore, heaven, please raise high the banner of victory, and earth, return the rewards of joy to Father.

Glory, glory, infinite glory! We know that this is a moment when heaven and earth can harmonize in joy, so please, Father, do not take this moment of joy away from all our descendants of all generations to come. And Father, please allow us to become Your children who can march forward toward the satanic world, and please help us make the pledge to dedicate our heart and soul to become the heroes of restoration as quickly as possible.

Please accept this daughter You have established today, and crown her with the laurel wreath of victory and allow her to become the daughter who can appease the sorrows of Your heart. I hope and pray that, from this day forward, only the glory of victory will be with You, Father, and that You will be with all of our members following their own path. I pray this in the name with which You have sent me. (150-112, 1960.03.27)

Mother was 17 years old at the time of the Holy Wedding. I was 40 years old. As a fully grown man, I received a young lady of 17 years as my wife and placed her in the position of True Mother. This was unacceptable in the eyes of the world, but I had to do it for the sake of the providence. There was no other way. Ever since I received her as Mother, I have been leading the providence with her. So when we were engaged, I explained everything about the path I had to follow, saying, "This is the way I must go." Mother respects me because whatever I do is in accordance with the providential program. I also gave her basic guidelines, saying, "If you are attacked in this way, you need to overcome it like this. If you are attacked in that way, you must do things that way." Mother respects me because I do what I say I will do. Even though the path is difficult, I overcome each obstacle and move forward. (236-109, 1992.11.03)

The meaning of the Holy Wedding

For Jesus to fulfill his purpose in his lifetime, he needed to find his Bride. But he was not able to do so. That is why he left the concept "I am the Bridegroom, and you are the Bride" as his last testament. The resurrected Jesus looked for the Bride throughout the world. He searched for the best candidate among the most faithful believers within the realm of the Second Israel, regardless of nationality. For the past 2,000 years, he made continual efforts in search of her. When he finds the Bride, the true human ancestors can emerge; when the true human ancestors emerge, the True Parents can emerge. Originally in the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve should have become the true human ancestors and should have been installed as the true parents. However, due to the Human Fall, it is only now in the era of the Second Coming, after 6,000 years have passed, that God could find the true ancestors of humankind. (019-163, 1968.01.01)

Some historians say that in the 1960s history entered a time of great transition. The perspective of the Unification Principle is that although Korea became the base for the Christian cultural sphere to receive the Messiah, the Christian cultural sphere failed when it did not accept me. Nevertheless, we can assert that once the Holy Wedding had been held in the name of God and True Parents, history finally began turning in a new direction. In the present circumstances, history is full of changes. It appears that humankind is declining and descending into a world of death and that the world, beset by many divisions, is heading for destruction. At the same time, we can realize that the scope of historical events is moving beyond national and regional levels and expanding to the world. Ever since we entered the providential era during which we had to expand our foundation horizontally based on the bond of the God-centered lineage that we have with True Parents, the world has been beset by ideological confusion. Traditions have been falling into chaos. Things are being shaken up. Christianity also is being totally shaken up.

The Holy Wedding was held 14 years after Korea's liberation from Japan. During that time, the Christian churches in Korea were either those that were rebuilding after years underground or those that had survived because their members had followed the dictates of the Japanese and offered bows at Shinto shrines. The way began to open up by which God could lead the providence with Korea as its base and make a leap to expand to the world. The starting point for this transition was True Parents' Holy Wedding that took place in April 1960. After the Holy Wedding Ceremony, Parents' Day was inaugurated. That was the day when we finally could clear up humankind's history, a history imprisoned by bonds of defiled love, life and lineage from the false parents. The original love, life and lineage centered on God were newly planted and began to deepen their roots on earth. Although the world that had received the fallen archangel's lineage had continued up to that point, from that day in 1960 when the True Parents emerged, the lineage of the original Adam and Eve began to take root centering on God's love. (196-218, 1990.01.01)

April 11, 1960, was the day of True Parents' Holy Wedding. Externally speaking, it was an ordinary day; nothing seemed out of the ordinary. However, the Holy Wedding that took place on that day made it a day totally different from any other in history. Because of that day, human history is now in the hands of one person. At the moment of that one person's coming, were the circumstances prepared such that he could build a relationship with a nation and with the world? Did the circumstances of that moment have a strong enough foundation to pass on to him its relationships with history, with the present age, and with the future? The ceremony itself may appear to have been a simple event, but once people realize that it was the core event representing the entirety of human history, people throughout history will study to understand the significance of every aspect of that one day. (032-069, 1970.06.21)

We cannot fail, because we laid the family-level foundation in 1960. To put it another way: If we had not established that family foundation, we would have been doomed to fail. What a historic event was the Holy Wedding of 1960! On the foundation of the hard work carried out until now to find the one person, Adam, in the 6,000 years of the historical ages of the providence, Adam was able to set the standard on earth and receive Eve as the perfected Eve. This signifies that the divided spirit world and physical world finally can be connected as one on earth. Man represents heaven and woman represents earth. Thus the divided spirit world and physical world are connected. The wall that divides Adam and Eve and makes them enemies is broken down. The wall that blocks them from meeting God is torn down. In short, Satan is driven out. (122-097, 1982.11.01)

The peak, or apex, of the providence of restoration, occurred in 1960. At that time I was receiving persecution from the nation and the people of Korea, from all the Christian denominations and even from some of our church members. I was in a desperate, life-or-death situation. Indeed, the Unification Church was at a moment of truth; its very survival was at stake. In those difficult circumstances, I nevertheless proceeded with the Holy Wedding. At that point, a new history began. The Holy Wedding was a historic turning point. Even historians state that 1960 was a turning point. From that point on, I began resolving all the problems one by one. (052-068, 1971.12.22)

A wedding amid severe persecution

True Parents' Holy Wedding was a cosmic, momentous event, worthy of a great celebration on earth. Thereby the True Parents, as God's embodiments, gained the world-level victory in both the spiritual and earthly sense. This was the vertical indemnity condition for resolving issues on the horizontal plane on

earth. In order to be in the position to conduct the Holy Wedding, I had to restore Jesus' three main disciples who failed to support him. I had to indemnify the failure of Adam to properly establish a family. Due to the Fall, Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, were unable to form a true conjugal relationship. The Fall occurred through the act of two individuals, a man and a woman. Restoration, therefore, cannot be completed by one person alone. A man cannot be restored alone, nor can a woman go to Heaven alone. Nothing can be resolved without the efforts of two individuals. After restoring the positions of unfallen Adam and Eve, these two individuals are to establish the standard of the True Parents on earth. This requires the betrothal of three disciples. (022-189, 1969.02.02)

The Holy Wedding was carried out 14 years after the liberation of Korea. In the formation, growth and completion stages, each stage is represented by a period of seven years, so it is 14 years until the end of the growth stage. Therefore, 14 years after Korea regained its independence, the failure of Jesus' mission on the national level was remedied by the Unification Church. Since Jesus came as the Adam of the growth stage, to remedy that failure on that level in the land of Korea, we had to pass through two seven-year courses of formation and growth and suppress the conditions of all the opposition surrounding the environment of the Unification Church and fight a war against all who opposed us. It was under such circumstances that the Holy Wedding was conducted.

Why did we have to do that? Because Jesus died on the cross, he could not bring about the resurrection of both the spirit and the flesh. In other words, he brought about only spiritual resurrection and not resurrection while in the flesh. Since he set the way for the providence of spiritual salvation but was unable to set the way for the providence of physical salvation, the two became separated from each other. That is why, in order to remedy all of these failures, Jesus has to take over all the domains of the spiritual world from Heaven and appear again on earth, where he still needs to go through the process of advancing forward while fighting against the satanic world. For this reason, the Holy Wedding was held in the midst of a fierce battle. Because Adam and Eve fell during the completion stage of the growth period, Jesus needs to take over the spiritual foundation centering on the standard of the 14 years until the completion stage of the growth period, and follow a course in which he must engage in the fight to expand the substantial foundation.

Such being the case, what was the biggest problem after the Holy Wedding? It was that the True Parents centered on God were born on this earth. In the course of history, many evil parents were born, but the standard of good parents centered on God had never before been established on this earth. Therefore, the day that standard was established was the day Satan had to lose everything, including his dominion over humankind that he had enjoyed since the onset of history. Since everything he had was about to be eroded from the ground-level upward, Satan's forces had no choice but to raise the flag of revolt and persecute us with all their might.

Then why were we still persecuted even after the Holy Wedding? It was because the ceremony was held at the completion level of the growth stage, and there still remained another course of seven years. The question was how to accomplish that seven-year course. Only by completing that seven-year course could we reach the realm of direct dominion. In passing through the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and reaching the realm of direct dominion, there is a portion of responsibility to be fulfilled.

Adam and Eve should fulfill the ideal of love by which they can unite absolutely centering on God, reach a position in which they cannot be separated, no matter what happens, and form a family centered on God within the realm of direct dominion and thus lay the foundation of a family based on love. If they can do so, heaven and earth will come together on that foundation, and from the foundation where a man and a woman thus join together as one, a new foundation based on love, life and lineage will expand horizontally in all directions. The Holy Wedding was held in order to lay such a foundation. (196-213, 1990.01.01)

Even on the day before Mother assumed her position, the Ministry of Home Affairs called her in to write a report, so we had to fight against them. Since Jesus was sentenced to death in court, we needed to recover her from the court. This is restoration through indemnity. (182-297, 1988.10.26)

I had to fight up to the last minute. The day before going to the wedding venue, I had to go to the police station and write an affidavit. Numerous betrayers made accusations against me. Just as Jesus' 12 disciples betrayed him, 12 previously faithful church members banded together against me. Individuals who had been on the side of the Unification Church began to oppose me, other churches opposed me, and the nation opposed me. Just as the nation of Israel, the leaders of Judaism, and Judas Iscariot banded together and killed Jesus, I was being driven toward a similar fate. The date of the Holy Wedding was the 16th day of the 3rd lunar month in 1960. That time marked the highest peak of opposition. I stood on the dividing line between moving one step forward or one step back, between life and death, between making a new start and not making one. In those circumstances, I managed to bring a new historic result. On that day God made the greatest proclamation in human history, the proclamation that will spread heavenly fortune to the world. It was the historic day that Jesus spoke about -- the day of welcoming the Bride. It

was the day of True Parents' Holy Wedding. From that moment on, I could go on the offensive and take the first steps forward. Finally, I could begin resolving the problems we faced and move swiftly forward centered on God. (067-250, 1973.07.01)

After receiving a blow in court at 11:30 in the morning the day before, the Holy Wedding ceremony commenced at four o'clock in the morning. This standard was set in the midst of such struggles in order to create the foundation of peace, joy and happiness for all peoples. (183-162, 1988.10.31)

For seven years, beginning in 1953, I prepared for the Holy Wedding. Around that time virtually everyone opposed me: the nation, Christianity, and even some members. In 1955 I was incarcerated, but even in prison I fought to lay the foundation for victory. Then in 1957, I began preparing for the Blessing in earnest. I fasted for 40 days and exhorted the members to evangelize in order to lay a nationwide foundation. I went on the offensive and expanded our witnessing activities throughout the nation. I raised the Unification Church to a new level. In this way, by 1960 I had laid a nationwide foundation and made an impact on the nation. So, although I was opposed by the nation and by Christianity on the national level, it was still possible for me to proceed with the Holy Wedding. I had to conduct the Holy Wedding in circumstances similar to those of Jesus when he was arrested and made to go the way of the cross. Indeed, at the time of the Holy Wedding, the nation opposed me and Christianity opposed me. They were united against me. (111-199, 1981.02.20)

Chapter 3: True Mother Came as a True Parent

True Father and True Mother who are the True Parents

The True Parents about whom the Unification Church speaks are a man and a woman who are centered on God. Adam and Eve became false parents, so True Parents must come instead, becoming good parents. Since it was due to their failure to reach perfection that Adam and Eve became the false parents, True Parents must be able to stand in their place, in the position of having perfected themselves centering on God. Originally, God's ideal at the time of the Creation was for Adam and Eve to reach perfection and become the true parents. That position must be rectified, and the original ideal must be attained. I am the one who is pursuing that ideal. In the Unification Church people call us True Father and True Mother. In external appearance there is no difference between us and you; however, our root, our origin, is different from yours. The True Parents emerged with God as the root, the first such human beings in history. We have come as the central people of the Unification Principle, and we introduce it with true love. (148-040, 1986.10.04)

It has not been possible to connect the words "true parents" to the time after the Fall. God's ideal of creation began with True Parents at the center. However, because of the Fall, people's lineage changed to something completely different. The nations are also different from the originally intended unfallen, natural nations. Originally there was no religion. Whether to do with religions or nations, any relationships or connections based on the lineage after the Fall have no relationship with True Parents. The only thing that is absolute is God's concept of True Parents that He had in His mind before the creation, a fundamental idea that is connected to God's love, life and lineage. All the ideas, concepts and relationships that you think about have no relationship whatsoever with the ideal of True Parents before the Fall. (491-144, 2005.03.18)

The True Parents need to come in order to realize God's Will, the providence of restoration. It is not fallen parents but True Parents who must come. Although you can come across and read the words "True Parents" without even thinking about them, they represent something very different. These words have appeared together for the first time in history. This is a miraculous and momentous event that never occurred in the past. With the word "true" the name "True Parents" can emerge because True Parents' love surpasses the love of the many parents who have come and gone until now. They have appeared with a love that comes only once. Because they have such a standard, we can say the words "True Parents." (067-225, 1973.06.27)

Until now God has been in the position of the King who created heaven and earth, but that authority was lost because of the fallen parents. Because it was lost due to Satan, until now God's royal authority could not be used even once. The Enthronement of God is conducted by True Parents, not by God. There is no one other than the True Parents who can restore that. The age of royal sovereignty comes after God has finally been able to establish the sovereign power contained in the original standard of the creation of heaven and earth and has been able to resolve the family, tribe, people, nation and world. You should not speak lightly about heaven and earth. It was humankind and Satan, the archangel, who joined forces to reverse God's royal sovereignty. However, True Parents came and removed Satan and restored the perfected standard of God's providence -- that is to say, they abolished the hells of the spirit world and the earthly world, came to stand in a position with no connection to the Fall and established God in His position of royal sovereignty. (339-087, 2000.12.07)

When we look back in history, historically many prophets and saints have existed. They achieved unity

externally, but because they were not able to achieve mind-body unity, they were not able to go beyond their basic limitations. However, now that True Parents, who are centered on God's true love, are here on earth, have realized a true family, and are going forward realizing a unified, ideal society, the mainstream of God's providence of salvation has now been set in motion. The True Parents are mediators who graft God and humankind together. Without True Parents, people cannot go to God. The True Parents are the ones who are showing the only path for salvation from the Fall. (271-063, 1995.08.20)

True Parents must be two people. If they are not two, they cannot fulfill the standard of True Parents. Even if one or the other has established the standard of victory through his or her spiritual battles, unless they together become True Parents as physical human beings on earth, they will not have substantiated the standard of victory in the world. Even though the spirits in the spirit world have established the condition of victory there, unless the True Parents are inaugurated here on earth, these spirits cannot establish a foothold on earth that corresponds to their foothold in the spirit world. Therefore, once the True Parents come, from that time on they must dedicate their lives and fight on behalf of heaven and earth. The period of their struggle will be 40 years. What kind of battles are True Parents going to fight during this 40-year period? First they have to go through trials in the spirit world. After that they need to undergo trials on earth. They can establish the standard of True Parents both spiritually and physically only when they have fought until the end and held fast without collapsing.

That is how they will accomplish the hope of 6,000 years of providential history. Parents' Day, the day on which the reality of True Parents began, was the day that marked the starting point of true success, of achievements both in the spirit world and on earth. (013-285, 1964.04.12)

The Messiah is the person who comes in the position of having transcended fallen nature. He is equipped with God's love and is the original, ideal model of masculinity, with his mind and body united. Such a person comes to earth to become the center and bring the world's people to resemble him so that they are qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. But what is it that the Messiah had to find? He comes as the Bridegroom, looking for his Bride. The Bride is in the position of Eve. Since Eve was lost in the Garden of Eden, the Messiah must come to earth and find the new Eve. In the Unification Church, Parents' Day marks the fulfillment of this search. It is the first time in history that a day with the title "True Parents" has ever been declared. This day was established to celebrate the day on which a man and woman became husband and wife based on the original love of God. It celebrates the beginning of the ideal realm of human completion that God has long desired. It celebrates the complete unity of the mind and body of a man and the mind and body of a woman, achieved horizontally with God at the center. (128-137, 1983.06.11)

Because men represent the plus nature of God, they become another self of True Father, and because women represent the minus nature of God, they become another self of True Mother. Each of them is also a representative of God. Becoming one through love is like embracing the cosmos. This is a universal reunion. (009-083, 1960.04.16)

Within the original nature of God's creation, we find an internal nature and external form, along with male and female nature. A man born with these traits is God's second self. A woman is also God's second self. A man is God's right alter ego and a woman God's left alter ego. When both a man and woman appear as substantial selves on earth, the man is set on earth as the embodiment of True Father and the woman is set on earth as the embodiment of True Mother from the point of view of the coming True Parents. (157-302, 1967.10.16)

Based on our original nature, we as individual beings are the arms and legs of the True Parents from the time we are born. Therefore, Jesus also said, "I am the vine; you are the branches" (John 15:5). Men are True Father's arms and legs; women are True Mother's arms and legs; men are True Father's second selves, and women are True Mother's second selves. Accordingly, from God's point of view, if men can really become True Father's second selves and women can become True Mother's second selves, no matter how far apart they might be, God's love will surely be there. God's heart naturally connects to people whose lives are focused on True Father's Will and True Father's situation. (011-063, 1961.01.01)

The people who are the extension of the family of Eve are the women who are living in this world. Because these women were scattered by false love, a central being that is able to bind them through true love must appear. That is the Bride talked about in Christianity. You know the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, don't you? The Bride does not exist to live well on her own. She is one central being representing all the women spread across America. When she becomes happy, the women of America also enter a position of happiness. That person is the mother we talk about in the Unification Church. She is called True Mother. If True Father is the coming Lord of the Second Advent, True Mother accomplishes the Marriage Supper of the Lamb and represents the position of the woman who is being called the Bride. (233-294, 1992.08.02)

We don't know how amazing the words "True Mother" are. To become True Mother and in order to attend True Father, how much sacrifice must she have experienced! Furthermore, you must know the

extraordinary hard work that True Father experienced in order to become True Father and to meet True Mother. You must never forget that story, not the long, long period of 10 million years that are connected through it, nor the path or the peaks that could not have been gone over without infinite tears and sorrow. (251-176, 1993.10.17)

Rebirth and True Mother's mission

God lost His beloved true son and daughter, whom He wanted to love to the fullest. From the viewpoint of the man-woman relationship, the God-centered husband and wife were lost. From the viewpoint of the child, the true parents were lost. By a single fallen act, God lost these three. How can these three types of love be recovered simultaneously through the principle of restoration through indemnity? How can a standard that God can approve of be established? These are the issues. First, the standard of a true son and daughter who can be loved by God must be restored. When the son and daughter who have gone through that process come of age, they should unite as husband and wife with God's love as their center. Then they must give birth to good children in order to form the four-position foundation that God desires and that can bring Him joy. (022-204, 1969.02.04)

In the Bible, it says that we must be born again. Saying that we must be born again is saying that we were born wrong. When a person is born into the world, through what is he born? Is he or she born through the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? No. People are born through love. They are born through the love of their parents. The ancestors of humankind were born through love, but they were not born through a love of joy that God could be proud of and could proudly proclaim to the universe. They were born through a love that Satan liked immensely, but God was extremely sorrowful about.

People are born through their father and mother's love. However, because that love has gone wrong, being born is also being born wrong. That cannot be helped. Because you became wild olive trees from having been born through this wrong love, your branches must be completely cut off, and you must be grafted with branches of true love from the true love tree. The wild olive trees that have grown for thousands of years must be cut off completely and grafted with the true olive trees while offering devotions. (022-243, 1969.05.04)

You must enter a relationship of love with Adam and Eve, centering on their first love for each other. Only then can you be born again, from the loins of True Father and the womb of True Mother, and form a bond of eternal life with them. You cannot pay the full indemnity for this without going through the Principle of Restoration. Whether you realize it or not, that is why you have been loving me centered on the Will, and why your hearts seek to move in the same direction I move, in concert with my feelings. You are setting the condition to be grafted with the True Parents, from their bone marrow to your heart, so that you can be born again from the ones in the position of the original Adam and Eve, through the womb of True Mother. Without doing so, you cannot be restored. (026-310, 1969.11.10)

Just the seed that is deep in the Father's bones, that is not enough to give you rebirth; the mother's womb is also needed. In other words, one must be reborn from inside True Mother. Therefore, as we held the Holy Wedding in 1960, the True Mother was established. Through this, you feel the grace of the love you felt when you were in your father's bones, and because you created a relationship with True Mother once again by your being able to love and attend True Mother, you connected to a relationship of love with True Mother for the first time and then you could be born.

You who are being born this way must become different. Then who should you become like? Abel and Cain are in the position of twins. In other words, they are the same as twins who came from the one womb of one person. In order to understand what you have to do in order to be restored, you must look at Jacob and Esau, and at Perez and Zerah who reversed their positions while twins in the womb, and you must do the same. Here, however, you will not be reversing positions in the womb; you must take the position of Cain who can accommodate himself to his younger brother. You must stand in the Cain position that is not against, does not refute and does not oppose his brother but rather attends him. Only then is it possible to enter restoration for the first time.

Because you cannot go into True Mother's womb, what you must do is become one with True Parents' children. You must stand in the position of a baby in the womb for three years. Because of that, I have chosen mottoes for you for those three years. The first is: "Make this year the one that leaves behind the greatest results of your life." The second is: "Become a representative of God." The third is: "Show them and speak proudly." Here the words "Show them and speak proudly" mean restore a trinity of three spiritual children.

Now as Cain-side beings that have been born from the womb, you must stand in the position of loving True Mother and at the same time loving the babies. By concurring with them in that way, you should stand in the position of attending them as the center and establish the condition of heart of participating at the same rank with them as twins. Only in that way can you prevent the opposition of the two seeds in the womb. Without you knowing about this, I have carried out these works. (035-227, 1970.10.19)

True Mother must re-create the sons, Cain and Abel, and create a realm of unity with them. She must connect everything to the tradition and the standard of how to live, beyond the nation to the world level, to live in the Kingdom of Heaven. To do this, she must create oneness with her children, educate the Cain world, and reach the level of God's nation. Only when we reach the level of God's nation can we restore the authority of the eldest son, the authority of the parents and the authority of the king. Therefore, True Mother is in a position of leadership and must be an example in all things. She is in the position of the subject partner, and she has to govern the environment. Mother is in the subject partner position. (330-103, 2000.08.13)

Chapter 4: True Mother and the True Family

True Mother's beautiful nature

Mother is a woman of great wisdom. Also, her eyes are magnificent. When she smiles, I am completely mesmerized by her charming eyes. She has such beautiful eyes. I really like Mother's nose too. When she senses something good is coming, she laughs in such a way that her nostrils start to flutter. I am not sure if this is part of Mother's charm, but I tell you that, as her husband, it moves my heart. Also, if we encounter a grave or serious situation, Mother tries not to purse her lips and thus show she is upset. When I see her wisely restraining herself like that, I find her lips even more beautiful. Mother also has a lovely demeanor. Indeed, she has many great qualities. I think wives who possess these graces carry the secret keys to solve all problems and make all things go well. (127-093, 1983.05.05)

Having studied Chinese classics, I am familiar with the traditions of Korea's past generations, and from their standpoint, Mother is a very proper woman. When she keeps gently still, she expresses internal qualities unsurpassed by anyone and worthy of respect. Hence, when I teach that this is the essence of the beauty of Eastern women, Western men automatically understand what I am saying and they want to marry Eastern women. That influence has been great. Among Western brothers, many said they decided to marry Eastern sisters because they thought the sisters would be like Mother. From this perspective, I believe Mother contributed greatly to teaching members around the world about the ideal image of an Eastern woman. (170-037, 1987.11.01)

These days Mother has a higher reputation than I do. They say she has not only Oriental beauty but also Western beauty. Therefore, I have learned many things from her. I received a great deal of Oriental training, but not so much Western training. For example, when I eat, I stuff a lot of food into my mouth all at once. I don't eat gracefully. I just think of enjoying the food. But Mother wipes my mouth each time I make a mess. (113-149, 1981.05.01)

People say that Reverend Moon's wife is beautiful. I am studying what a true beauty is. Beauty is not defined by a beautiful face. A beautiful mind is what defines beauty. Even if you were to scold such beauty for 1,000 years, that beauty would maintain the harmonious and pure image of a woman who could laugh throughout those 1,000 years while maintaining her beauty intact. It is such a person who can beautifully brighten and embrace her environment. I believe that such a woman stands out among beautiful women. (220-175, 1991.10.19)

Mother has no personal self-interest. You can see this clearly through our wedding ring. She doesn't know who it is that she gave it to. She gave away her engagement ring and her wedding ring to others. It is no ordinary woman who can give her things to the members and then forget about it like that. I respect and praise Mother from this perspective. I praise Mother. (170-036, 1987.11.1)

That period when we were on a world tour was a difficult time. The Netherlands is famous for diamond processing. Knowing that, I deliberately passed by a diamond factory and asked Mother to select one. Not having much money back then, I asked her to choose a small one with the best color, since we couldn't choose a big one. We bought one and later I asked her, "Where is your ring?" She replied, "Where would it go? It simply flowed away." She had given it to someone else. (175-321, 1988.05.01)

Mother has a great side to her. These days she has been giving away her possessions, so much so that I asked her not to. She has given away everything, including even our engagement ring. While touring 40 nations during my first world tour in 1965, I bought a one-carat diamond ring in the Netherlands because I had not given her a nice wedding ring at the time of our marriage. However, when I asked her where the ring had gone, she said she had given it to someone else and she could not remember who it was. That is why her engagement ring, and her wedding ring as well, were gone. I buy clothes for her too, but when I open our closet, there are only a few left inside. She basically shares everything with others. (196-294, 1990.01.02)

A good characteristic of Mother is that she likes giving to others. When she does, she doesn't want to give something bad, so she gives them the best of what she has. That is her great quality. As a result, however, her wedding ring and the other gifts I have given her have all gone. She even forgets to whom she gave

them. When the season changes and I open our closet, she has no clothes inside. She already has given them to others. I am also such a person. When I have something good, I don't use it for myself. (175-064, 1988.04.07)

Mother has many good qualities. She is wonderful. You can know this by simply looking at her face. Once she has made up her mind, she goes till the end. Mother's determination to bring an end to the whole complex mountain of pain and anguish within her lifetime is even stronger than mine. (222-277, 1991.11.03)

She is an excellent mother. Having grown up under the embracing influence of the founders of three religious groups, she is connected with everything important from history. We finally have a historic repository or a treasure house who is worthy to stand in the position of Mother. She is a type that can love individuals or families from any country. If I buy her something precious, she gives it away to somebody without my knowing it. (590-330, 2008.05.25)

Mother took many outfits with her for the events in Europe, but when she returned she did not have any of them. She gave all of them away to the members. I think she even gave away her wedding ring, because she did not have it when she came back. When I asked her about it, she said she was not sure what had happened to it. You have to forget about the things you have given away. The person who gives her life and love and forgets having given it is the one who can be closest to God. (238-153, 1992.11.22)

Mother is originally very gentle. In the past, when we were in Cheongpa-dong, she always used the same path to go back and forth. I watched her carefully. Whenever she went out and came back, whether it was once or twice in the same day, I took notice of what path she walked on, and she always took exactly the same path. The next time, she again used that same path. That is because she follows the proper path. (232-307, 1992.07.10)

Mother may look gentle on the outside, but she is very bold. You can tell as soon as you look at her. Her hands reveal this trait. Mother's face looks friendly and gentle, but her hands tell a different story. They are thick and bold. She will not budge an inch even when she is standing on the stage. This is how I knew she was ready for the position of Mother. (227-189, 1992.02.11)

Mother, this woman whom I have married, is truly great. Her greatness does not come from a beautiful face but from a beautiful heart. Even her beautiful voice and her graceful manner are because of her beautiful heart. I am a teacher who teaches God's philosophy by actually living it. Because I am living according to the Principle, I praise Mother and promote her in public on God's behalf. This is in accordance with the Principle. (229-224, 1992.04.12)

One of Mother's special qualities is that she is intuitive. This is an inborn quality. Further, whenever I ask her to do something, she makes a firm resolution to fulfill it. Then she never forgets that resolution until it is done. That is why she has been able to overcome every trial on her path. She has perseverance and patience for God's purpose. Another reason I am very grateful to Mother is that she is very giving. She always wants to give away her most precious possessions, not only to our own children but also to all of you, at any time and without hesitation. I believe that this trait of her personality is a God-given gift. (092-329, 1977.05.03)

To me, Mother is flawless. I see nothing but goodness in her. This did not just happen overnight. Whenever she meets people, if they are men, she compares each one with me and thinks, "This man has a quality just like True Father." By thinking that way, she can be openhearted toward them. It is so beautiful. Look at her eyes and hands. They show how observant and sensitive she is. When she hears me speak a sentence, she analyzes its structure -- what the subject is, what the object is, what the clauses are, and so forth. What I am saying is that she is smart and analyzes things well. In her teens, her friends said she was an impressive and unforgettable girl, and I think it is because of her powers of observation. When she went places, she was prudent about the routes she chose. She would travel only on the routes that she felt comfortable with. (435-020, 2004.01.31)

A couple with true love

If Mother had asserted herself, it would have been difficult. Thanks to her absolute submission, we passed through everything in the shortest possible time. I truly respect Mother on this note. I know that she does not compromise when it comes to the way of the Principle. You need to trust your husband or wife. You need to know what kind of person your wife is. Once a person makes a decision, that person should be able to advocate for his or her position in front of everybody and make sure the decision is not forgotten. This is the only way that person can take responsibility. One must not live and act thoughtlessly, as one pleases. (102-047, 1978.11.19)

You need to understand: Although it is easy to become a teacher in the Unification Church, it is difficult to become a leader who is supported and welcomed by Mother. It is easier to play my role as a teacher at

the podium in front of all the members than in front of Mother. Mother believes in me more than she does you. Mother believes in me more than you believe in me. You must know that she respects me in all aspects. (103-147, 1979.02.18)

I can tell you something about Mother. Sometimes Mother asks, "You love me, don't you?" and I say, "Yes." If she says, "How much?" I reply, "My love is as big as you." In replying that way, I am saying that my love is the biggest possible, since I could never say I loved her more than I loved God. As a person who attends Heaven, I do not speak carelessly. Since I haven't been able to truly love God yet, at least I must practice such courtesy with my spouse in our life as a couple. (112-065, 1981.03.29)

Because of the Fall of Adam and Eve, we have lost the love of a mother, the love of a wife, and the love of a younger sister. We have lost three great loves. From a woman's perspective, she has lost the love of a father, the love of a husband, and the love of an older brother. Even in Satan's world, living without a father is not proper. It is a failure according to the most fundamental principle. If you cannot live more happily than anybody in Satan's world, you are failures. If you cannot love your wife more than your own sister, it is a failure. Your wife is a holy being who has now appeared in front of you as a representative fruit of the feminine image of three ages; therefore, you must be grateful to Heavenly Father.

I call Mother "Omma." I don't follow the Korean custom of using one of our children's names and call her "So-and-so's Omma," just "Omma." In the early days, when I returned from being away somewhere, I would report to Mother all night about everything I had been doing. You must become a man of whom a woman cannot be suspicious, even if she tries to be. Therefore, whatever you do, you must first discuss it with your wife and then do it. You must ask her if she has an opinion about what should be done. (047-223, 1971.08.28)

I made a promise with Mother. I asked her, "In the United States it is considered quite natural to hold hands; not doing so may actually seem more awkward. Here in Korea, I cannot hold hands, because it is awkward to do so. How would you like to do this?" Mother replied, "What's awkward about it? We should walk holding hands." I ended up receiving instructions! That is why, when Mother holds my hands on a platform where she is speaking, I keep still and do not remove my hand. Mother tells people that her husband loves his wife more than any other man in Korea loves his wife, more than any other man in the world. There is also a rumor among Americans that I love Mother. This has happened not because I was good to Mother but because Mother did well. Mother really does well. Her face is beautiful, and her mind is beautiful as well. She also speaks well and is good at everything. (101-167, 1978.10.28)

I am a fearsome person. I face the world fiercely, and yet, when I come back to Mother, I am beaming with smiles. I am the opposite. Mother must also be bold when she goes out into society. We must have both aspects. We must be strong and yet soft, soft and yet strong. (129-053, 1983.10.01)

I have told you that in love there is shared inheritance, equal status and shared participation. Based on this, we also can take part in God's position. Wherever we go, we can stand in the same position as God. Mother also stands in the same position as me. We stand in a position with the right of equality night or day. What belongs to Mother is Father's, and what belongs to Father is Mother's. (171-116, 1987.12.13)

Man and woman are born for their partners. No matter how great a person I may be, I was born for Mother. Would Mother feel happy or bad about this? What greater happiness can there be as a woman? Once we were in a plane and I asked her, "How different does it feel to be going to Japan with me instead of going alone?" Wouldn't that be a difference as wide as the gap between heaven and earth? I cannot describe her expression in words. No matter how great I may be, I must consider Mother to be more precious than I am. Mother would not feel bad, would she? Hence, I would like to ask all the men of the Unification Church following me to please uphold this tradition as a fundamental principle, inherit it, and compete against one another to be the most loving husbands. If you do so, your wives will respect you as Mother respects me. (228-159, 1992.03.27)

Raising True Children with love

I must have 12 sons and daughters. Twelve children are a must. There are 12 directions, 12 months in a year and four seasons. In addition, there are 12 gates to Heaven. Hence, the 12 directions must be filled. Thankfully, Mother has had 13 children. I need people who can take my place when I am no longer here; hence, centered on the 13 children, in line with the 12 directions, we must establish a foundation like the 12 gates to Heaven, through which we can communicate with the spiritual world from the physical world. Centered on the natural law of the firstborn son and second son centered on the parents, the family line can be carried on naturally. Once this traditional pattern is expanded horizontally, this will become the heavenly nation. (121-252, 1982.10.27)

It is normal to have only one or two children in the United States. Hence, if you have three or four, people open their mouth in surprise. When you tell them you have ten children, people are shocked. Yet, do you know how many times Mother had a cesarean section? If she hadn't had cesarean sections, I believe she

certainly could have given birth to even 21 children. Mother almost died giving birth to a child while I was in Germany. So she had no choice but to have a cesarean section. I understand how much she has suffered. (202-069, 1990.05.06)

Older people find no greater joy than embracing their grandsons and granddaughters. Mother is like this too. You cannot imagine how much she loves her grandsons and granddaughters. With her own sons and daughters, she was more reserved; however, once we started to have grandchildren, she found their every word so magical. She says that when a grandchild calls her, saying, "Grandma!" and then embraces her, it is just as wonderful as a hug from her husband.

She says it is like looking at a flower, smelling its fragrance and swallowing its fruit all at once. She can't get enough of her grandchildren. (197-033, 1990.01.07)

When you look at Mother, you can see she is not an ordinary woman. After the difficult history that began with her grandmother, she must stand in a position where she can distinguish between all directions and determine the direction of goodness; a position where she has established the relative standard of love that can find that one right path, that one ideal path for her husband; a position where, based on the principled trajectory, she comes to possess eternal value as an object in front of her subject to the degree that she can eternally assert that value without any possibility of complications. This is the position Mother must stand in as Mother. We must support such a woman and advance together. (173-177, 1988.02.14)

Mother establishes her husband's authority within the family and trusts him as a true teacher. It is about practicing what one preaches. Hence, Mother will educate the children, saying, "You must resemble your father. Your father is a great person." (173-177, 1988.02.14)

No matter how busy our day was or how late we returned, until our children reached the age of 12, we always kissed them goodnight. We always gave them a kiss every day. When we kissed them, we would say, "You missed Mommy and Daddy, didn't you? We're sorry." When saying sorry, our throats would become choked with tears. Then I would say, "You probably don't know that your Father has a path to follow. If I don't fulfill my responsibility, humankind will be destroyed, and so will heaven. So please bear with us, even if it is difficult. After you turn 22, you will come to understand your father and mother." (200-134, 1990.02.24)

I tell Mother that throughout their lives our children should never shed a tear caused by a fight between their parents. We must live in such a way that our children can say, "We have never seen our father and mother fight." Children are the most fearsome judges. Ours sons and daughters are witnesses that can be recognized in front of Heaven. (100-303, 1978.10.22)

No matter how disappointed you are, never deal with your children with a flushed and angry face. This is my philosophy. As a result, our children always think of us as a peaceful and harmonious father and mother. They think Mother is the best among mothers and Father is the best among fathers. Their father and mother are like second Gods to them. If asked, "Would you want to have God or your mother and father?" and they answer, "We want our father and mother," God also will be happy. This is precious. This is the most precious teaching of all. (165-094, 1987.05.20)

Part 3: The Wilderness Course and True Mother's Victory

Outline of True Mother's Life 3: The Wilderness Course and True Mother's Victory

After the Holy Wedding, True Parents finally came to stand in the position of the parents and opened the way to the marriage Blessing, through which they could save humanity. In addition, they presented all things in front of Heaven and began their work of restoring the world in earnest. All of these things were accomplished in the seven-year course after the Holy Wedding.

The seven-year course and its providential meaning

True Parents began three consecutive seven-year courses in 1960, spurring on the expansion of both internal and external foundations. In particular, the seven years after the Holy Wedding was the completion-period course in True Father's 21-year course, and internally it was the moment when True Father determined his victory on the family level by marrying Mother as a perfected man. At the same time, it was a period in time when True Mother freed herself from the conditions of accusation from the satanic world and substantially restored the standards of daughter, mother and True Parents, which were lost due to the Fall.

For three years after the Holy Wedding, True Mother was subjected to all kinds of schemes, slander and arrows of hatred, but Dae Mo Nim saw them all in advance through revelations and fulfilled the responsibility of blocking them all.

True Mother explained about Dae Mo Nim's mission of the time: "After the Holy Wedding, Dae Mo Nim saw everything that was going to happen to me through revelations she received in advance. My position would have been difficult for anyone, but I was able to overcome all the difficulties thanks to Dae Mo Nim. What she did compensated for the wrongdoings of all women."

True Father's 21-year course, True Mother's seven-year course, and the first seven-year course of the Unification Church were concluded successfully, and on that foundation, the second and third seven-year courses of the tribal, national and global levels began.

Throughout the urgent providential course, True Mother always followed behind True Father in silence and led a life of devotion and perseverance. She lived like a shadow, not even buying a single dress for herself of her own accord, and yet she still fulfilled her providential mission of having to give birth to at least 12 children. Starting with Ye Jin nim in 1961, True Mother gave birth to 14 True Children within 21 years, with little or no time for recovery in between.

True Mother recalled: "During the five years from 1971 to 1975, I went through several miscarriages. It was a very difficult time. True Father had recently arrived in America, and there were threats on his life. Accompanying Father under such circumstances, I was so anxious all the time that I could not help but miscarry." Mother also added, "Since that time, if I so much as take a cold shower, I catch a chill, which paralyzes me for at least five minutes."

Victory in the indemnity course in America

True Parents proclaimed the Day of Victory of Heaven at the victory celebrations for the Washington Monument Rally on October 4, 1976, after which they proclaimed the Day of Victory of Earth on True Parents' Birthday, February 23, 1977. That day was True Mother's first birthday after reaching the age of 33 [by Korean reckoning] and the "day of the condition for indemnifying on earth, through True Mother, Jesus' wish to joyfully celebrate his 34th birthday together with Heaven." On that day True Father said, "As of today, on the path of Reverend Moon and True Mother, an era ushering in a whole new level has begun." He also declared, "At the close of the year 1976, True Mother was completely liberated."

On May 3, 1977, on the seventeenth anniversary of True Parents' Holy Wedding, True Mother gave her first-ever official testimony of her life. On that day she said, "The path I have walked has been a continuation of difficult hardships that do not even bear thinking about. Just as God put True Father through hardships, He also made me go through ordeal after ordeal. Satan, too, tested me just as he had tested True Father and Jesus. This weak woman standing before you has overcome stringent and severe hardships, of the kind that the Messiah has had to go through, though you may find it impossible to believe."

On that day True Father said of True Mother, first, that she had a quick spiritual sense and excellent inborn power of discernment; second, that she practiced absolute obedience toward the Will and had a firm and persevering determination to achieve her goal; third, that she by nature enjoyed giving to others; and fourth, that she had performed a truly wonderful feat in giving birth to and raising the True Children.

From after the Holy Wedding of 1960 to the proclamation of the Day of Victory of Earth in 1977, True Mother led the life of an absolute object partner who stood behind True Father and followed him with unquestioning faith. Thus, she overcame all difficulties and was liberated, which was also True Father's success and victory.

Meanwhile, the Unification movement that swept across America like wildfire from 1972 came to face opposition from the leading class, and the US court indicted True Father on suspicion of tax evasion. After several trials, True Father was imprisoned in the Federal Correctional Institution in Danbury, Connecticut on July 20, 1984, where he had to suffer incarceration for 13 months until August 20, 1985.

True Father never despaired, even when he was climbing the world-level hill of Golgotha. While he was still in prison in Danbury, he instructed that the end of communism be declared, and that various activities for the Victory over Communism movement be carried out to swiftly bring an end to the Cold War. Moreover, he called True Mother in East Garden in the early morning of February 1, 1985, and proclaimed the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven, by which the gates were opened wide and the spirit world and physical world became connected.

Remembering the day True Father began his prison term, True Mother expressed her feelings: "I truly deplored my helplessness in being unable to do anything other than send him off. I resolved again and again to strengthen my heart, biting down hard on my lip, but I could not hold back the tears that kept coming."

True Mother never failed to travel to Danbury to see True Father every time he had visiting hours. Holding the hand of Jeong Jin nim, who was just two years old at the time, Mother visited Father every

day with her devoted heart. When she walked back down the hill after the visit, she would swallow her tears, turn and look back at Father, and affectionately wave goodbye.

True Father's imprisonment was a difficult cross for True Mother to bear, but she still continued to walk her path in silence with that heavy burden on her shoulders, and the members who looked upon her came to depend on her. While True Father was in prison, True Mother presided over internal events, both big and small, including Church holy days and celebrations, in place of True Father. At the same time, she also followed a busy schedule of presiding over such external events as the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences and receiving important guests.

In the 40-year wilderness course from 1945 to 1985, True Father and True Mother sacrificed everything and continued to march forward solely for the fulfillment of the Will. After the Holy Wedding, True Mother, in particular, had to endure many ordeals in her heart, but she triumphed over all these hardships and was able to expand the providence on the worldwide level.

Chapter 1: The Seven-Year Course and Its Significance

The completion-stage seven-year course

The first seven-year course is the period in which we need to carry out the work of connecting a perfected man to a perfected woman, that is, Mother. This is the period of setting up the family standard of Parents. So, during this time Parents formed a family centering on God. Only then was I able to construct a family base on this earth, which is the restoration of the four-position foundation. Centering on the Parents' family, the blessed families need to unite completely. The period in which they need to do this is the second seven-year course. The second seven-year course is the period during which, centering on the Parents' family, the families that have received the Blessing need to unite completely, thus forming the unified realm of Abel. They then need to establish a standard that people can recognize. (075-010, 1975.01.01)

The beginning of the age when you could attend Mother in 1960 marked the completion of the Old Testament Age and the realm of the Bride in Jesus' age. After this, going beyond the standard of the Fall at the top of the growth stage, we must cross over the third seven-year course to achieve the world-level standard of completion. That is why the 21-year period of formation, growth and completion in Adam's family, the three seven-year courses from 1960 until 1981 centering on True Parents' family, were conditions that had to be set on earth. That course of 21 years was the condition to transcend the 6,000 years of history from the age of Adam through the age of Jesus to the age of the Lord at the Second Coming. All vertical conditions need to be settled horizontally. (266-063, 1994.12.11)

What has God been doing for the past 6,000 years? What has been His unchanging desire throughout history? It has been to find the one person, True Mother. It is to find her through Adam, after re-creating him and sending him to earth. This is re-creation. Originally God created Adam and then created Eve from Adam; therefore, for re-creation Adam has to come to earth first and then find Eve. In other words, he must find and establish Mother. In order to do this, during the first seven-year course I had to put Mother on a path that would enable her to break away from any condition by which Satan's world could accuse her. This means that she does not need to fight directly with Satan; instead, Mother just has to have absolute faith in me and always unite with me. Then Satan cannot invade her. Adam lost Eve because he failed to fulfill his responsibility. Thus, it is Adam who must set the standard of victory, by restoring his position in relation to Eve as well as bringing Satan to submission. I am fulfilling this purpose during this seven-year period. Moreover, having established this standard, I have to raise Mother, in the position of Eve, to that standard in heart and spirit. This is how we can reverse through indemnity the failure of the fallen parents and secure the foundation of the True Parents. (017-322, 1967.04.10)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have completed this first seven-year course. This was the path they were required to go to become the True Parents. Therefore, no matter what accusations Satan threw against us, Mother and I had to make a breakthrough during this time period. I paved this path, leading the way as the representative of the family during the first seven-year course. During this period, we, Father and Mother, had to unravel all the tangles of history. In particular, this seven-year course was the time when I had to reverse Eve's dominion over Adam and completely secure Adam's authority. For this, I had to educate Eve. In other words, during this period I had to educate Mother in such a way that she would set a standard of absolute obedience and compliance before me, even at the cost of her life. (073-245, 1974.09.22)

From the principled perspective, there is the indirect dominion and the direct dominion. In this period, the indirect dominion and the direct dominion must be linked and the perfected Adam must connect with and establish God's direct dominion. So the seven-year course is the time during which a seven-year period of indemnity is completed. (143-180, 1986.03.18)

Vertical history must be restored horizontally through indemnity. The history of 6,000 years corresponds

to the seven-year course. The 6,000 years are indemnified in seven years, and 6,000 years plus 1,000 years combined into seven years are the seven years of indemnity. Because this is the formula, all fallen people, whoever they are, must go through a seven-year course. If you cross over this period successfully, anything is possible. (021-211, 1968.11.20)

During the period of the first seven-year course, we the Parents struggled internally before heaven and earth. We paid indemnity to clear up all the tangled bitterness and sorrow that originated from the Fall. This was the period when we could resolve and clear up all the historical circumstances in the area of lineage that arose from Adam and Eve's mistake. To move forward, we had to sort out relationships that could be offered to Heaven, offered for the sake of the Will, not only in mind but also in body. This is how we were finally able to complete the first seven-year course and True Parents could appear in this world victoriously. (077-215, 1975.04.12)

The Unification Church has passed through the initial three-year period of the first seven-year course that began in 1960. The number three is the number for finding children, and the number four is the number for restoring material things. We have successfully carried out this first task. We prevailed during these three years and laid the foundation to advance to the world. Upon this foundation, we need to restore the Second Israel. Therefore, the remaining four years is the period during which we need to work hard for the restoration of the people. Exerting all our energy, we need to work diligently and victoriously restore people and territory. You are doing in four years what I did in 40 years. In the future, even the matter of taking down the Unification Church signboard will depend on you. Instead of a Unification Church, we need to make a united Korea, and on that foundation, we need to make a united world. If you cannot fulfill this responsibility, I will have to get another nation to do it. (013-091, 1963.10.22)

True Mother's victory in the seven-year course

It was not easy for us to secure the family of True Parents. We had to rise all the way to the highest position in the world, passing the formation, growth and completion stages. There was a seven-year course to reach the completion stage. Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage, so we had to walk a seven-year course starting from that point. Until the establishment of God's Day on January 1, 1968, Mother had to travel an arduous path as a woman. She passed Heaven's tests without any problem, and this is why she could become what she is today, our amazing True Mother. (170-034, 1987.11.01)

Mother's mission was to have unshakable confidence in her husband, regardless of the circumstances. Whatever happened, even if she should die, she had to keep an unchangeable attitude toward her husband. That must be her commitment, even if the nation opposes her. Eve fell into a position Heaven could not trust, and because Eve made Adam fall, Adam could not trust a woman 100 percent. Therefore, Mother had to maintain a firm position in which Heaven, God and her husband could have 100 percent confidence. For the first time in history, when God and man could trust a woman 100 percent, God's Day could be established. Do you understand? That was January 1, 1968. In order to restore the standard of restoration by indemnity for both men and women, Eve had to go through the completion stage from the top of the growth stage. Upon entering the eighth year, after completing her seven-year course, Mother and I could obtain Heaven's seal as a true, perfected family, and we could take our position on earth. (113-140, 1981.05.01)

After seven years and the beginning of the first day of the first month of the new year of 1968, the entire path of indemnity has been overcome and God's Day has been established. The authority of the mother has emerged, and the era of settlement on this earth has come. We are advancing to a global level now. After undergoing the three-year course in the 1970s, the standards for the nation and the world could be transcended, linking the foundation of the people with the foundation for the Bride that Jesus was not able to establish, which was completed on the foundation for the tribe and race. This paves the way of indemnity to move on to the world level. (162-233, 1987.04.14)

In order to dissolve bitter pain and sorrow, indemnity must be paid and there must be complete restoration. I went through a course of struggle to restore and perfect Adam and laid the foundation for his victory; hence, I can stand tall as a man. Likewise, in order for Mother to stand tall as a woman, she as Eve must go through the course of restoration through indemnity. This requires her to undergo a course of battles in heart, in body and in faith that no one else can fathom. The path that Mother had to pioneer was as dangerous as walking a tightrope. While she was completing that indemnity by the end of her first seven-year course, we instituted Parents' Day, Children's Day and Day of All Things. Then, on January 1, 1968, we welcomed God's Day. Thereby Mother finally gained the qualification as the original woman on earth and stood in a position equal to mine on the family level. (059-284, 1972.07.27)

Chapter 2: True Mother's Suffering and Victory

True Mother's three years of suffering

The Unification Church launched its activities in earnest in 1960, on the basis of attending Mother. Despite persistent opposition from the nation and from Christianity, you laid the foundation to push through that opposition so you could welcome Mother and attend her. However, this did not mean that Mother could just live with me right away. Just as you had to go through a three-year period of separation after your marriage Blessing, we too had to do dispensational work in order to secure our family. The path of the Principle is the same for everyone. The first seven-year course was to indemnify the problems in Adam's family and make a family-level foundation centering on Mother. Since Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage, we had to pass through that level to enter the completion stage. (106-267, 1980.01.01)

After we were married, Mother's own mother, father and uncle were not allowed to enter our home through the front door. Did Adam and Eve have a mother, father or relatives? Our relationships of the heart had to be united vertically and horizontally. It would not have done to unite them vertically and let them flow away horizontally. I called Hong Soon-ae and told her that she should never enter by the front door. I said to her, "For three years you can only enter by the back door!" When I was about to enter the room, she had to leave the house. Who can stay at the home of Adam and Eve? Can the mother stay? It is only God who should stay there. This is something that the secular world cannot understand. True Mother also could not have any ideas about her relatives. Being the Mother is that difficult. I told her to cut herself off from everyone because there still remained responsibilities for her to fulfill. There was a course she had to complete for God for seven years, which took precedence over her family. She had to walk that seven-year course from the completion level of the growth stage to the completion level of the completion stage. Without going through this seven-year course, God's Day, Children's Day and Day of All Things could not have been established. (170-123, 1987.11.08)

What did Mother have to do during the seven-year course? It was important that she not complain about having to walk the path of the cross, to live based on that standard of heart. There are pearl gates that 12 women from the east, west, north and south can pass through, centering on Mother, and what are these pearl gates? They are the gates of love. Only the people who truly love Heaven can pass through those gates. Those who love only on the human level cannot pass through them. Those people will go to hell. That is why Mother herself must bear on her shoulders everything that has been done wrong by innumerable women in all historical ages, and she must not complain about having to bear that cross. Instead, she should be grateful. (212-081, 1991.01.02)

The great thing about Hong Soon-ae is that she received revelations about everything and reported them all to Mother. She already knew about what would happen on the next day, and she told Mother everything, even the names of people who would come, because she knew the lonely position Mother was in. When you see something like that, you can know that the spirit world is indeed alive. (163-253, 1987.05.01)

If something happened, Hong Soon-ae came to Mother in secret and told her about it. Dae Mo Nim did that for three years. When she said something would happen the next day, it happened without fail. Therefore, she told Mother to be absolutely obedient to me. She taught Mother about such ways of obedience. Eve acted of her own accord, reversed the positions of the subject and object partners, and consequently destroyed the ways of heaven and earth. Yet Dae Mo Nim, True Mother's mother, did the things she did in order to make up for all of that. The spirit world taught her everything. Thus, Mother was able to pass that stage. She crossed over the wall, the wall of the family. She went beyond the environment wherein she would have had doubts about her husband. (195-150, 1989.11.07)

For three years, from 1960 to 1963, all the blessed families in Korea went through the course of restoration on the national level. Since the national-level foundation was lost in Jesus' time, all members in the church left home and participated in mission activities to restore the nation. During that time, as they worked on the front line, Father and Mother joined them in heart by eating the same meager food. When we ate, we did not place our food on the table but on the floor, just as many members did. When we did so, we had even the child inside True Mother's womb set the condition of participating with other church members to make the condition to restore the nation. (054-225, 1972.03.24)

Until 1963, True Parents worked with you, sharing your situation and eating humble meals of barley rice. We had to set that indemnity condition for three years on the family level. At the same time, you had to go out and struggle to give birth to your spiritual children. Just as you ate barley rice, True Parents also had to eat it. Now we will have to offer our sons and daughters internally when we go to America for a course of sacrifice on the world level. This is what we have to do. All of you ate seaweed soup with rice after Ye Jin was born; it was as if you were receiving blood from Mother while inside her womb. As Mother ate soup with rice in it, you ate the same food, which was like receiving her blood. It was the same when Hyo Jin was born. On this foundation, I established Children's Day and then Day of All Things. It was because we attained such a standard that I had the foundation to establish these Holy Days of blessing. Thereupon, when the first seven-year course came to an end and True Parents' family was liberated, I instituted God's Day. (047-340, 1971.08.30)

Victory in the three-year course

How is the standard of the perfected mother to be established? The perfected mother cannot come to be unless she passes through the connection by which she has been born through the mother at the growth stage. That is how things are, based on the Principle. In the end, the mother in the completion stage of the growth period must restore all that has been lost until now in the fallen world. In other words, as the fallen mother, she must indemnify all lost historical conditions and stand on a level where Satan cannot accuse her. Otherwise, the age of the mission of the perfected mother cannot be ushered in. (159-072, 1968.03.03)

Mother has suffered greatly until now. She had to lead women who were like wolves. They did all kinds of things, including praying for Mother's death. She had to go through such a path of suffering in order to firmly establish a home where I could live in comfort. To try to stop those arrows of hatred, I did not even allow her to sleep in the same room for three years. It was at such a time that she gave birth to Ye Jin, and because she slept in such poor quarters, she suffered from postpartum illness. She lived in a place where she trembled in the cold and where even her own husband did not visit. How could I go to see her every day? If I did, all kinds of rumors would have flown about, saying that I was engrossed in my wife. Therefore, I had to leave her in loneliness. As time went by, those women came to know about it too. After a year, they stopped whatever they had been doing and started saying that I should not leave Mother where she was. All of them also went to see her. (231-352, 1992.07.01)

True Mother lived separately from me for three years. Dae Mo Nim was so great that she received a revelation of my daily schedule from the spiritual world and talked about it with True Mother every day. True Mother's greatness was in obeying my direction absolutely. During the three years of separation, every grandmother, old woman and middle-aged woman in the church opposed Mother out of jealousy. However, owing to the support of the younger women, after three and a half years True Mother was liberated and could live with me. (280-214, 1997.01.01)

If Father had brought Mother into his family right away, the opposition and jealousy on the part of the other women in the church would have been so fierce that they might have become insane or even tried to kill her. Father had to deal with such an intense spiritual whirlpool. So for the three years after Father married Mother, he intentionally ignored Mother, almost casting her aside. He just left her alone. Sometimes Father would visit her. Mother didn't know what was going on, and Father never explained it to her. Father would almost never take Mother with him, only occasionally. Most of the time Father would take along women of different ages and different kinds of character. But Father did this on purpose, taking those people and going to some public place. Mother was left wondering why Father did that.

After two years, those older members told Father, "Mother is too pitiful; you should not treat your bride like that. Let us not hurt her anymore; let us bring her in." They started speaking to him like this. If Father had initiated such an idea, they would have gone in a different direction. Father knew this. Mother was the youngest, only in her teens. There were women in their 20s, 30s, even 60s and 70s, and they all felt they should be Father's spouse. But finally, they realized that they had to serve Mother, even though she was young. This took at least three years. Nobody knows the incredible suffering Mother had to go through. Then for the first time, they said, "Mother, you have suffered enough for our sake. We will serve you as our Mother. You are our Mother." (235-253, 1992.09.20)

Chapter 3: The Wilderness Course and the Day of Victory of Love

True Parents and the wilderness course

Today, this morning, is the beginning of a new day when Mother turns 40 years old. She is young, but she has been attending this husband of hers who is like a teacher or a parent, or sometimes like an older brother to her. Father, please pour out Your love on Mother who has endured well while walking the bloody path to establish the Unification Church as we know it today. She has a big heart. She has loved the children of the enemy, and she has stood in the position to love her own children as well.

Now at the beginning of this second 21-year course, because of the historical mission of uniting the blessed families with True Parents' family, Ye Jin's family and Hyo Jin's family, I come before You, Father, with sincerest gratitude that the surprising event of this engagement and marriage can take place according to Your Will.

Father, the families of this son and daughter are not fully aware of their historic mission of becoming unified families. Surrounded by the blessed families, these two couples, whom the angelic world cannot defeat, are working wholeheartedly to resolve historical resentment; they are forming a barrier around everyone, coming before Heaven with seriousness and showing You filial piety. Thus, they can stand in the position to teach others.

Through this work, and through achieving the standard of peace centering on the realm of the family, then the realm of the tribe, race and nation can be realized. Only then can the parent family pass through the standard of national True Parents and go through the course of the world-level Parents. They then can become the True Parents' family of heaven and earth. The foundation for God's love can then be established, as well as the foundation for God, liberated from eternal pain, to rule as the king in that nation. Please think about this amazing truth once again. Father, please bless this precious time as we enter the year 1982. (116-167, 1982.01.01)

The mother's role is to help her two sons to unite. She has to make the older son into the younger son and the younger son into the older son. She must embrace Abel with her right arm and Cain with her left and go to Adam. Mother did this before she was 40 years old. She took her own children and the Cain children and took them together to Father. After that, she brought them to God. (116-200, 1982.01.01)

Mother is now a distinguished person. Therefore, I am giving her full authority over everything. (124-257, 1983.02.20)

Heung Jin's sacrifice and the Day of Victory of Love

In December 1983 I spoke in eight major Korean cities at Victory over Communism rallies in order to unite the citizens of the Republic of Korea in defense of their nation. I also assembled 72 national delegates from the Professors World Peace Academy, representing the world and Christianity. I had a fierce battle with Satan as our rallies swept the nation. The entire nation of Korea was caught up in our activities. Through these rallies, I intended to subjugate Satan, who was working through North Korea to invade the South. At that time my own family was under extreme duress. As the representatives of the entire world, my family was under attack. Since Satan could not attack me directly, he attacked my son Heung Jin. During the last Victory over Communism rally in Gwangju, while I was actually speaking, my son was involved in an automobile accident.

It was like the nation was the father and the church was the son. In this situation, Christianity was completely opposed to us. All this had to be indemnified, so a great ransom had to be paid; an extraordinary sacrifice was required. For that reason, God allowed Heung Jin, one of the precious sons of the True Family, to serve as that sacrifice. Due to the opposition of Christianity on the earth, the path for Christianity centering on Jesus in the spirit world to cooperate with the earth was lost. This means that the Christian spirits in the spirit world centering on Jesus cannot come down to the earth and cooperate if there is opposition from Christians on the earth. Therefore, the spiritual and physical worlds must be connected through offering a sacrificial condition. Then the organization that gave the sacrificial offering, through its surroundings or through the physical world, can develop and move forward as the replacement for the foundation that was lost, using the vertical connection to the spirit world to spread horizontally on the earth.

Many things were accomplished through Heung Jin's sacrifice. In life he was the most filial son, but now this most sincere and pure child is in the embrace of God. If it were not for Heung Jin's sacrifice, there could have been two very unfortunate developments. First, the North Korean military could have invaded South Korea; second, my earthly life could have ended. Already, because of the success of the Victory over Communism rallies in Korea, Satan could no longer attack South Korea. Satan still tried to attack me, but instead, at the exact time when we were harvesting victory in Korea, he ended up claiming Heung Jin, and my son became a sacrificial offering. (130-289, 1984.02.07)

On December 31, 1983, we, as True Parents, visited the hospital and conducted the Unification Ceremony. That ceremony placed Heung Jin above both the communist and democratic worlds. It was a serious moment. Even though this robust son whom we loved more than anyone else was about to pass into the spirit world, we could not allow ourselves to shed tears. During the three days after the Unification Ceremony, when we instituted the Day of the Victory of Love, we could not shed tears. Since we were marking his victory over death while standing as the True Parents of humankind, we could not permit ourselves to be sad. By their mistake, Adam and Eve built a high wall that would separate human beings from God. This created the valley of death, the hell of death, hell in the spirit world and hell on earth. Standing at the highest point, we put everything in order and offered up our son. You cannot imagine how serious we were. As a parent, if I could have slowed the passage of time, I would have. But at a time like that, I had to send Heung Jin off without any hesitation and keep a steady heart in front of Heaven. I even had to tell Mother that if she cried, she would invite misfortune. Only after we had held the Seonghwa Ceremony in Korea and sent him off to heaven, could we cry as his parents. Only after the ceremony was completed, did I shed tears, but those tears of grief were mixed with tears celebrating his victory. (408-293, 2003.06.17)

Heung Jin passed away, but he is not dead in the physical or spiritual world. I believe he will bring about the realm of the resurrection of love. This means that though he went there through death, he will resurrect love through his death. He will hold onto the spirit world and the earth and proclaim the realm of resurrection of love. Through this, he will depart from the realm of death.

You should not think that my son overcame indemnity conditions and died for the sake of proclaiming this Day of Victory of Love. Putting aside his bodily death, you must know that this was a fight for the sake of God's love. You must think of God's love more than a mother and father think of their child who has passed away. You must think about a love that can win over the realm of death.

I take full responsibility. That is why we decided to perform the Unification Ceremony. I told Mother, "At this time, you and I should stand as parents that Heaven can be proud of, that all the ancestors in the spirit world can be proud of, and that the spirit world, angelic world, the thousands of apostles, saints and sages can be proud of. We have to create a mood in which all humankind will bow to us because they can see that there is no mistaking that we have the authority of love that can rule over the realm of death. We have to make all humankind testify to us, saying, 'You are indeed the center of God's love.'" Even after sending my son off, I hold aloft the banner of love and move forward into action for the sake of a new world.

You must understand that the Day of Victory of Love is the day of a new beginning that commemorates this. It could become the standard for establishing the new direction of love nationally and worldwide. That is why we give this day the name "Day of Victory of Love," as proclaimed at four o'clock on January 3, 1984. (130-203, 1984.01.15)

You must understand that people in public positions must maintain a strict standard. I told Mother, "Mother, you must know this! The shoots on the very top of the tree are very high, so when the wind blows, they have to overcome the most dangerous circumstance. However, even while doing so, the shoot must grow. No matter how painful it is, even if there is a storm and it finds itself shaking, the shoot must continue growing in order to drive the roots deeper." Therefore, we have overcome the realm of death, and the world that we are entering from now on is one centered on the Day of Victory of Love proclaimed by True Parents. Now is the time when we can establish the condition by which the realm of death cannot reach beyond this wall. As long as you love me more than your own life, Satan cannot attack here. This is because Heung Jin passed away in your place. Based on that, if you become people who can love True Parents more than Heung Jin did, then Satan cannot move at all. Until now, Satan ruled over love, but from now on, God rules over love. (130-205, 1984.01.15)

Chapter 4: True Mother and the Suffering Course at Danbury

Prayer before departing for Danbury

Beloved Father! At this hour, 6:44 in the evening on July 20, 1984, I am about to leave East Garden, and, on behalf of all the children and everyone, I am here to dedicate this prayer before my departure, so, Father, please receive it.

Even though the path may be rough, I know that You are alive. I am following the path along which You guide me. Advancing on this path, I must pass beyond the final hurdle, overcoming it successfully. I pray that You can please approve this path that I must follow while enduring and suppressing sadness.

At this time, I come to You with my 12 sons and daughters, my young children, together with Mother, who must stand in the center and take all responsibility, and I place them all in Your care, Father. I pray that centering on True Mother, Hyo Jin and Ye Jin can become one and stand in a position of going the suffering path and carrying the cross in place of Father. Until I can cast off everything and come back, I place them in the position to take on all the suffering and other important responsibilities, so I pray that You can be with them, Father.

Even if I am not here with them, the blessed families must become completely one centering on our family and the children of blessed families must also become completely one. Furthermore, I know that you will protect this family that Heung Jin left behind with sadness. I know that Jesus and all of the spirit world will fully cooperate and march on with all their energy in order to resolve this pain.

As I prepare to leave, my heart is not heavy or burdened with pain. I know that even when I go to that place, I must attend you, Father, and take on the task that is entrusted to me so that I can fulfill my responsibility without shame. So, Father, please put Your worries about me to rest, and please protect my family, the church, the outside Christian churches, America and the free world. I pray that the path of the truth can be opened in the communist world as well.

Where I am going is a place that You have left for me. Therefore, I pray for Your blessing as I go to look over that place and prepare to manage things while I am there. I pray that our head of the staff and all our staff here can unite and that a new spiritual atmosphere can come about.

I pray for God's grace to come down upon that place where the cool, calm morning breeze blows. I pray for your blessing so that the glory of Father's pride, which is like dew in the morning sunlight, can sprout there. I hope that everyone here can continue to pray until the time when I can meet them in this very

place again. Please receive their prayers as if I were praying together with them, and may the weekly Pledge time be a blessing.

I have one more hope: that the Parents and sons and daughters can become one, the blessed families can become one, the Unification Church can become one, the already established churches can become one, and that the free world can become one and find the position of the Parents that can realize Your original ideal. I am taking lively steps while cherishing in my heart the day when this can be offered to you as glory, so please, Father, remember this.

I believe that Your boundless grace and love will be with us, and I offer all this in the name of the True Parents. (133-253, 1984.07.20)

True Mother shared the suffering at Danbury

At this time, I am most grateful to Mother. I am sure that while I was in prison at Danbury, True Mother's heart suffered through the deepest valleys numerous times. Because her life has been like that, her standard is gradually rising. Through the events of Danbury, she has come to understand my value even more. (136-046, 1985.12.20)

You probably don't know what a happy time it was for True Mother when I was in Danbury. She would come to visit me without fail while longing for the times when we could walk around holding hands. During that time, she did not even think about why True Father was in the detention center. That husband is just her husband. That is true love. For a wife to visit her husband while he is in prison requires boldness and strength. How much stronger must she now be, since I entered prison as an innocent man! It is not something to be ashamed of. It is a fact of history that she can be proud of (235-279, 1992.10.11)

I must go on, even if the path I have to tread is one of suffering. That is why I had to bring my family to America, and now my children do not even know Korean. I brought my children to America when they were still young. They followed me here because I am their father. Their father was taken by the American government and is in prison in Danbury. When the world sees this, do you think they will be able to save face? True Mother suffered a lot because of me.

Could she be assured of my safety in prison? Hostile communists worldwide had their eyes on me. In prison, I was completely vulnerable, as if I were lying naked in a field. Mother visited me every day in Danbury, shedding many tears. And when she was back at East Garden, don't you think she cried there too? Every Sunday morning at 5:00 a.m. she shed tears as she bowed before God and prayed for my safety. Our children shed tears alongside her. Why did they have to endure this situation, crying like that? I have money, authority and knowledge. I can also lead people. But why did I come to America? Why did I throw myself into this fight? It is only because of God's Will. (146-183, 1986.06.15)

What is it that I must accomplish at Danbury? Because the first parents blocked the path, at three o'clock in the morning on February 1, 1985, Mother and I, at East Garden and Danbury respectfully, proclaimed the Day of Opening the Gate to Heaven, paving a highway that takes you straight from hell to the rest of the spirit world. Through this, people in hell can take that path and move up. The path is now open, so your ancestors can go down to hell and pay indemnity. They can be educated and then move up, one stage at a time. (137-114, 1985.12.24)

Because of the Unification Church, the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven have been opened. Yet, since I have not yet gone there, still no one has entered. I searched and searched throughout the earthly world and the spirit world, even to the lowest level, and I have created the only path that can lead people straight to the throne of God in the Kingdom of Heaven. To set up that path, I had to move from the individual level through the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation, world and the spirit world. When you travel on that path, you must signal with the banner of love. Without that signal, you cannot travel on that road. You are not allowed to. Do you have confidence that you can go to the Kingdom of Heaven? You can go there by driving the car of love. When you do, an angel will signal to the car of love and guide you to the Kingdom of Heaven. The highway is now built that will take you there.

I, in Danbury Prison, together with Mother in East Garden, opened the gate that connects heaven to earth for the first time. It is a road that begins in hell. Therefore, for people who entered the spirit world thousands of years ago to go to Heaven, they have to pass through all the levels of hell. This means they must come to earth and work with their descendants who are fighting to win over hell. For you to go to Heaven, you must win over hell. Those who win over hell can go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

I did not mind going to prison. When I went to Pyongyang, I already knew who I would meet, as if the meetings had been prearranged. Jesus had 12 disciples, but when he went to prison they all betrayed him. In my case, when I was imprisoned I actually found 12 disciples and even more. For restoration through indemnity, I had to restore all that was lost. In the future, where should you build a memorial tower to commemorate me? You should memorialize the places where I experienced prison life. One of those

memorials should be at Danbury, where, based on Mother's unity with me during my incarceration, I proclaimed the realm of ideal oneness between Father and Mother. (566-183, 2007.06.19)

Part 4: The Opening of the Era of Women and the World Speaking Tours

Outline of True Mother's Life 4

After Korea's liberation from Japanese occupation, True Parents successfully completed their 40-year wilderness course and announced that it was time to welcome the new era to enter and settle in the land of Canaan. The years 1985 to 1988 was the period to settle in the happy land of Canaan. Thus, True Father emphasized that we must be absolute toward True Parents' words, their commands, and their actions.

At the service to celebrate the 31st True Parents' Day, which was held in the United States on March 27, 1990, True Father announced the liberation of all women and that True Mother would be the second founder of the Unification Church. This was on the foundation of Pal Jeong Shik, which was consecrated on August 31, 1989, restoring the authority of the elder son, and the Proclamation of Heavenly Parentism, which was held the following day, on September 1.

True Father said, "From now on, even if I am not present and Mother is, there is no disruption to the will." He also emphasized, "Until now, a woman could not represent the providence that represented heaven and earth. However, the realm of the Liberation of All Women centered on Mother, which is centered on a mother's and father's love, the ideal of one unified body, has been proclaimed on earth."

The change in True Mother's status

Ten days after True Parents proclaimed the liberation of all women and declared True Mother as the second founder of the Unification Church, they departed for Moscow. It was April 7, 1990. True Father met with Mikhail Gorbachev, then president of the Soviet Union, at the Kremlin Palace. There Father stressed that for the Soviet Union to succeed in everything, it needs to attend God. Moreover, he clarified that the path to the Soviet Union's survival was to take down the statues of Lenin, accept religious freedom, and educate their citizens in religious values. Afterward, student leaders from the Soviet Union and the Commonwealth of Independent States who received Divine Principle education played a large role in preventing a Communist Party coup. All of these things contributed to advancing the turning point for the dissolution of the Soviet Union and the end of the Cold War.

In this way, True Father sought out Moscow, the headquarters of the world's communist camp. In such pressing circumstances, following the proclamation of True Mother as the second founder of the Unification Church, on June 15, 1991, the ceremony for the Gomyeongseong Proclamation was held at Clearstone Deer Park in Canada, with four Japanese women leaders present. This proclamation essentially made it clear that church members should attend True Mother as they would True Father, even when he wasn't present, and continue to work to complete True Parents' will. Father said that Japan, in particular, should unite with True Mother and embrace the world.

True Parents held the Proclamation of the Day of God's Eternal Blessing (Chil Il Jeol) at Hannam-dong at seven o'clock in the morning of July 1, 1991. Beginning on that day, the providence transferred from the age of restoring the authority of the elder son to the age of restoring the authority of the parents. With this, the foundation was completed for True Mother, who previously had stayed behind True Father, to be elevated to stand next to him.

True Mother gave her very first public speech on September 17, 1991, at the Tokyo Bay NK Hall in Japan at the First Women's Federation for Peace in Asia Japan Convention, with the title "The True Love Movement Bringing Salvation to Asia and the World." Following that, on October 31, 1991, the Korean branch was founded and on November 20 at the Seoul Olympic Fencing Stadium, the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia National Rally was held with 15,000 people in attendance.

Then, on April 10, 1992, at the inauguration of the Women's Federation for World Peace, True Mother proclaimed that as the representative of the Eve nation, Japan, she had collectively indemnified Eve's failures. On the foundation that True Mother had successfully laid, True Father declared the liberation of women and the opening of the era of women.

True Mother's world tours

On April 10, 1992, at the inauguration of the Women's Federation for World Peace, True Mother officially stood beside True Father. After it was declared that she was the True Mother of humankind through the "Proclamation of True Parents," True Mother began her world tour of more than 600 public speeches in commemoration of the founding of WFWP, which continued until 2000. True Mother's world tour course was a period for her to educate all humankind as True Father's representative and as the True Mother of humankind. Before and after the inauguration, True Mother worked to lay a foundation for

peace through meetings with present and former heads of state and expanded the missionary foundation by encouraging our members.

After the founding of WFWP in 1992, from September 24 to December 23 True Mother gave the speech "Women Will Play a Leading Role in the Ideal World" at WFWP inauguration ceremonies in 31 cities in 11 countries, including Japan, the United States, Russia and China, as well as in countries in Europe. On this foundation, True Father proclaimed the historic realm of liberation that brought back the unified global standard that existed after the end of World War II.

On April 10, 1993, True Parents proclaimed "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age." Then, for more than a year they embarked on a speaking tour to the United States (53 cities), Japan (62 cities), Korea (40 universities), and 40 more cities worldwide for a total of 195 cities. Following this, they toured to an additional 100 universities in the United States. During the university speaking tour in Korea in particular, True Mother followed an intense schedule amid difficulties such as persistent opposition from activist students and Christian students, as well as potential danger to herself

On July 28, 1993, True Mother was the first Korean woman to give a guest lecture at the United States Congress. Moved by True Mother's speech, the senators and congressmen decided to enact Parents Day on a national level. On March 3, 1994, the law went into effect with President Clinton's signature, and every year Parents Day is celebrated nationally on the fourth Sunday of July. True Parents opened the doors to the United Nations on September 7, 1993. Since then they have given several speeches at the UN Headquarters and have met heads of state from many nations. They also have given speeches in national assemblies in seven nations, including Korea, Japan and Brazil.

As her speaking tour continued, True Mother followed a strenuous schedule, moving to a new country each day. In La Paz, the capital of Bolivia, which is 4,000 meters (more than 13,000 feet) above sea level, a respirator was kept on standby next to the stage for True Mother as she spoke. In Croatia, where surrounding nations were engaged in war, she felt innocent spirits who died miserably come to her to receive salvation, and she withstood physical and spiritual hardships alone as she offered prayer and devotion for them. During her tour in Africa, she caught malaria, yet without taking a break to recover, she continued to go from country to country to spread the Word.

Meanwhile, in the background, True Father offered sincere devotion in support of True Mother. True Father's utmost prayer and devotion were the greatest source of strength and the driving force for True Mother. True Father would wait more anxiously than anyone else for the telephone transmissions and video broadcasts of True Mother's speeches and would cry and share joy with her during their telephone conversations.

Chapter 1: The Advent of True Mother and the Liberation of Women

The course to find the perfected Eve

What is God's Will? It is for Adam and Eve to perfect themselves and then establish a family-centered on God's love. Jesus, who is the Groom, has to find and raise up the new Bride, the True Mother. Without doing so, it is not possible to establish God's perfected family. (114-027, 1981.05.14)

As recorded in the Bible, Jesus came and said, "I am the only begotten son of God." These are very valuable words. What is an only begotten son? He is the one who receives all of God's love and who receives it first. Only he can receive the love of God fully for the first time. He brought the love of the Bride and Groom centered on the origin of the family saying "I am the Groom and you are the Bride." There is only one Bride. There is absolutely only one. Only then can there be absolute love. Jesus is the perfected form of Adam. That is why he has to find the perfected form of Eve. (082-144, 1976.01.04)

Satan took away the mother of humankind, the mother on Heaven's side. She must be found again. Abraham, whom Satan loved the most, was established as the father of faith. In a similar manner, Eve, who was lost at the Fall, has to be established by selecting someone who is on Satan's side and most loved by Satan. There must be such a mother. We cannot reach the perfected position without first restoring the failure at the completion level of the growth stage. We have to fight it out. Through this fight the foundation of completion has to be established, and based on that, Eve's mistake can be indemnified by establishing the standard for the restored mother. (159-072, 1968.03.03)

A true couple is created when a true man and a true woman meet. The children born from that true couple are true children. Their sons and daughters are true sons and true daughters. A family established in this way becomes a true family. God is the central axis of such a true family. Based on this axis, God should have settled down as the center of love in Adam and Eve's family.

Then who are Adam and Eve? If God is the King of creation, then Adam and Eve are the King's object partners of love and the heirs who will inherit the realm of the Royal Family. The unfallen Adam and Eve

would have become the prince and princess. Adam and Eve were the first son and daughter born of God, the Great King of the universe.

There were only the two of them in the Garden of Eden. When they fell, they should have died, but if that had happened, all things in the universe would have become broken. God was striving to create human beings as his object partners, to be the standard of the ideal. Therefore, there is a need for re-creation and repair. This factory for repair is religion. The course of re-creation is the course to find the one Adam. All of history until now was to find the one perfected Adam. That is why Eve has to be found again, centering on the internal perfection of Adam. (229-057, 1992.4.9)

Because Eve fell, the root of sin, which has been passed down since the first ancestors, belongs to the woman. That is why historically, women had to walk a pitiful path until now. Women cannot be liberated until this root of sin is extracted. There have been some women's liberation movements since the end of World War II, but women have not had an easy path. Eve, who was supposed to become the mother, fell and became the cause of sin. Therefore, a person must come who can indemnify this historical sin and become the mother. She must prepare the victorious realm of indemnity by going through the pain of childbirth again and thereby establish a victorious standard on which to attend the Groom. As long as such a woman does not appear, the Messiah cannot ascend to the father position. Furthermore, women cannot be liberated. (019-103, 1967.12.31)

Jesus came to earth as the second Adam. The Holy Spirit, as the second Eve, was unable to assume a body. If you were to go to the spirit world, you would see that the Holy Spirit is the Mother Spirit of God. When Jesus returns to earth in the flesh, the woman whom he takes as the Bride must meet the qualifications, as stipulated by the Principle, to be the Bride. This requires that she knows all aspects of the heavenly way. It requires that she looks forward to the Returning Lord's coming and prepares to welcome him. These are the conditions she needs in order to prepare herself to establish the one God-centered family, nation and world. This is her responsibility as the Bride. That is also why, as we entered the 1960s, the women's movement began and is developing throughout the world.

No matter how many people there are on earth, they are all descendants of the Fall. They were all born from the evil, fallen lineage. Therefore, a true woman must emerge who can love them as their True Mother. As the Last Days draw near, the time is approaching when such a woman will appear. This is why, to prepare the environment, women's movements are springing up worldwide. We have now arrived at a time when many women can surpass men. The Last Days is the time when women can restore the Fall, and these women in the realm of grace are able to come forward and represent the heavenly Eve.

Today it is not just a matter of women's liberation; women can stand in such a position. Therefore, the True Mother must appear during this time. We must be able to attend this Mother on earth. Humankind has been trying to return to God, and as we enter the era when this can happen, the Bride must be established on earth. There can be no children without parents, no family without children, no tribe without families, no ethnic peoples without tribes, no nation without ethnic peoples, and no world without nations. (016-182, 1966.03.22)

True Mother has restored Christianity's realm of the Bride

True Mother has been following me. Until now, there was no equal realm of the bride. Mother has had to follow me because the Christian cultural realm as the realm of the Bride lost this equal footing. However, now I have overcome that hurdle. Conditionally I have established a foundation that can completely overthrow the world of Satan. Through this, I could bring Mother up and proclaim the liberation of women worldwide. (241-231, 1992.12.26)

After the Second World War a united world centering on the Christian cultural realm, the realm of the Bride, was not established. Therefore, Mother had to go that course for 47 years, and the movement for the liberation of women could be proclaimed centering on Mother. The Korean women could not attend me. Therefore, Japanese women are in the realm of Eve, and that is why Japan became the center of the world in the era of restoration. Britain failed as well, so Korean women must inherit the women's realm from Japan. The baton must be passed from Asia to the whole world. (241-232, 1992.12.26)

Until now, there was no realm of the Bride. However, now all the environment has been restored, and, just as it was 40 years ago, there is no enemy standing before me. I strive to plant true love and true life. Now that this united worldwide realm is coming to be, I can bring up Mother to be the Bride, connecting her to the realm of Eve and the realm of the Bride whose responsibility was not fulfilled 47 years ago. By grafting onto me, they can be restored to the original standard. Therefore, this is truly a new beginning. Korea has two enemies. Christianity is an enemy, and Kim Il-sung is an enemy. That is why I have to mobilize America. I will mobilize outside forces and surround them. Mother is important. From this perspective, you must know how important women are. Housekeeping is not important. The path to save your sons and daughters and your husband is one of becoming a sacrificial offering. (241-234, 1992.12.26)

Why has Mother been staying behind me until now? This is because the worldwide realm of the Bride was lost due to the opposition from Christianity and America. Restoring this is just like going through a 4,000-year course in which Adam has to raise his son, Abel. I have to restore and indemnify the eras of Abel at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos.

That is why on the worldwide stage, everyone opposed me, centering on the era of the individual. They tried to kill the prince of Heaven. The family, tribe, people, nation and world, combined together, tried to do this, and all surrounding things tried to strike me. They hit me, but they were unable to kill me. Despite all of their opposition, I was ultimately victorious, so everyone must surrender. The purpose of this victory was to find again and restore a victorious foundation for the lost realm of the Bride and Christian cultural realm. The fact that I was victorious can become the condition to say that they did not oppose Christ when he came on earth, but welcomed him.

That is why Mother had to stay behind me until I was victorious. I fulfilled my responsibility as the Groom. It is the same as Jesus, who had to take on John the Baptist's responsibility because John the Baptist did not fulfill it. The realm of John the Baptist crumbled, so Adam himself has to take responsibility for the first 16 years, and for the period representing the time after the Fall, I had to take responsibility for the whole and fight to overcome and reach the standard despite opposition from the whole world. I came back at the time to return to the original homeland, so what must I do when I return? The Unification Church, centered on me, is an extension of the Christian cultural realm and is connected to the foundation of the realm of the Bride. Based on that foundation, I can raise Mother up. (241-244, 1992.12.26)

The realm of the Unification Church is the victorious foundation of having replaced the Christian cultural realm. Based on that foundation, I raised Mother up. After the Second World War, centering on the fact that all things could be indemnified, I was able to rise up to a position of liberation. Only then could Mother be brought up to an equal position to me. From this equal position, Mother has to indemnify again the lost realm of the Bride.

I established the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia, starting in the Eve nation of Japan, and connected it to Korea. At the rally for the Women's Federation for World Peace on April 10, 1992, the women's era was proclaimed. By proclaiming the liberation of women worldwide, Mother came to stand in a position equal to mine. Women were not able to fulfill their responsibility centering on the realm of the Bride. Therefore, standing in this equal position and centering on the realm of the Bride, Mother has to bring all the women representatives of Korea and Japan together with those of America, Germany, Britain, France and Italy. She has to connect the realm of women's liberation in these seven nations and engraft them. That will become the standard of having restored and indemnified the responsibility that Christianity as the realm of the Bride could not fulfill after the Second World War. Therefore, we can enter the realm of liberation because the Groom fulfilled his responsibility completely and the Bride accomplished restoration through indemnity. (241-245, 1992.12.26)

The free world and Christianity, as the realm of the Bride, were not able to fulfill their responsibility and betrayed Heaven. I was able to overcome that and stand in the position of liberation again. The time has come when we can go forward again. That is why I must raise True Mother and win over the women of the free world. I must do this centering on all the women in developed nations of the world, beginning with Korea, Japan, America, Europe, Russia, and all the way to Oceania. (243-137, 1993.03.03)

The Gomyeongseong Proclamation of the second founder

Today is the 30th anniversary of Parents' Day. Originally the world should have been united centered on Jesus, starting when he was 30 years old. If Rome and Israel had not opposed him, he would have become the True Parent in the environment that had been prepared. He would have accomplished everything at that time. However, Jesus died without being able to complete that mission.

Jesus should have been able to liberate the world, starting from the foundation of a family, but since he could not do that, True Father followed a course of indemnity of 40 years, beginning after World War II. With this 30th anniversary of Parents' Day in 1990, True Parents finally have been able to show the model of a restored family on the world stage for the first time. At the time of Jesus, restoration could have happened at the national level, but now it has expanded to the world level.

The Unification Church has moved beyond the opposition of the free world centered on the United States. Next, we have defeated all the opposition of the communist realm. We also have moved beyond the opposition of religions. Father has taught world leaders about God's Will all the way from the Soviet Union to Kim Il-sung in North Korea. All the conditions have been completed. That means that now, even if Father is no longer here and only Mother remains, it will not be any problem.

Until now women could not stand as the representative of the providence of heaven and earth. Because

True Mother and True Father are united completely in love, this morning we have proclaimed that the age for the liberation of women has now arrived.

So what must be done now? Women are now on the front line more and are important in the mission. Women of the world must be united to go out and liberate women of all nations. Women have been used as Satan's instrument all throughout the ages. They multiplied Satan's children through illicit love. Satan's improper use of love must be stopped.

When Father is alone, he represents True Parents. When Mother is alone, she also represents True Parents. Therefore, True Father is the first founder and True Mother is the second founder. Until now women had to stay behind men, but from now on, they can walk side by side. (201-126, 1990.03.27)

True Mother has worked so hard. She is excellently trained, so she will do well in any situation. She has suffered a great deal and has undergone many hardships in her life but has overcome everything. All of her hardships served to train her. A good example is True Mother's completion of the Japan tour. I think we obtained excellent results. I know this, because I have delivered many public talks myself. True Mother has many good natural abilities. She is quiet but bold. You would not expect that she could embrace and unite an audience without hesitation. I am sure that all of you know that the title "second founder of the church," which makes her status equal to mine, is not just words and that you feel, "Father gave her this title on the basis of knowing her well." At this time, when we might have needed more than a year to establish this foundation in God's providence, she made it quickly. You have the responsibility to do even more than Mother. (219-268, 1991.10.11)

I am almost 80 years old, so in Korea people are beginning to ask me, "Who will be your successor? What kind of person will your successor be?" They ask whether the foundation that I established will not crumble away all at once. However, there has been no more talk since I established Mother as the second founder of the church and had her go on speaking tours around the world for one year. They are complimenting Mother, saying that she has risen to a very high standard. (256-045, 1994.03.12)

I have told the Japanese women several times that since Mother has completed her worldwide tour, speaking in every country, the age has come when Mother can now stand in place of Father. The time has come when Japan and the United States, along with Germany and all the other 160 nations, can unite. Now if Mother can unite the students of North and South Korea, the problems of Korea can be solved and all the world's problems can be solved. Now is the time when you must all unite centered on True Mother.

Now, even if I am not here, I have extended all my privileges to Mother. When the time comes that Father is not here, you must think of Mother. From now on, any time when I am not around, centered on the children, Mother must do lots of work to unite all the families. You need to know this, and you need to have the heart to pray for Mother and attend Mother. You have loved me up until now, but from now on you must love Mother. She must be on the same level as I am.

You must know we are entering the age of mothers, and especially you American women must do well. I have announced to the world that I am the first founder and True Mother is the second founder. I have announced it to heaven and earth. You must think like this. With that understanding, let's give True Mother a big round of applause!

[True Mother:] "Thank you for your support. As Father has taught us, the True Children and you are in a Cain-and-Abel relationship. In this age I will be grateful if all the families will pledge to God that they will become one with me and establish True Father's, True Parents' tradition. Thank you."

Cain and Abel must be united centered on True Mother. They must become one with True Mother. This is the only way to become one with True Father. This is true in the spiritual world and on the earth. With Father, with God. Everything must become one. This has to be clear so that in your family your children can be united centered on the mother. This is the only way they can be returned to God. (265-310, 1994.11.27)

Perfected original Adam will become the perfected father of the Kingdom of Heaven, and the perfected Eve will become the perfected mother of the Kingdom of Heaven. When they become the owner of the family, then the Kingdom of Heaven on the family level will come to exist. Therefore, Adam and Eve will become king and queen on the individual, family, tribe, people, national and worldwide levels. We are at a time now when we can go beyond the national level. Therefore we can step on the royal authority of Satan's world and establish the royal authority of the heavenly world. The day we can do so is March 27, 1990. Through this, from now on the world will turn according to how True Parents desire it to. (201-132, 1990.03.27)

Until now, there was no place for Mother to stand. She had to stick to me like a shadow. This is because she would be persecuted if she went before me. Now I am raising up Mother, and no one can hit her. Whoever hits her will be struck by lightning. They will need to pay indemnity. Mother has shown

absolute obedience and followed me like a young child. She ate when I told her to eat, stood when I told her to stand, went when I told her to go, and came when I told her to come. Who can criticize her? No one has the right to criticize her. Now the time has come. I am bringing up Mother and proclaiming the women's special era. No one can oppose Mother. Who can oppose what has become one? After Adam and Eve were perfected, there is no more Satan. If you oppose Mother after that, you will be broken and leave. She cannot be opposed. (231-177, 1992.06.02)

What did Mother do in 1992? Centering on her, all the women of the world became one. All the women of the world should be liberated and become one with True Mother. That is why Mother and Father become one centering on true love. The children inside a mother's womb do not come from the mother originally. They come from the father. Therefore, they must return through the father. You must establish the condition of creating a connection with the seed of the baby in Adam's bone before he got married.

How do you return to that place? It is through true love. You can return to that place when you become connected centering on Mother's true love and Father's true love. After you return to that place, then from that place you must establish the condition of being born again through the mother. You must know that only then can there be a revival of the women of the world. Humankind must go through the mother's womb and the father's bones to be born again. They must be reborn, and then they can live again. (244-147, 1993.02.01)

Father represents the true Adam, and Mother represents the true Eve. These four Japanese wives here are women who represent Japan, the Eve nation on the world level. Right now Canada is an extension of the original Eve nation of Britain. Therefore, I am establishing a ritual so that Mother can carry on the mission of the Messiah even after I pass away. The condition for Japan and True Parents to become totally unified can be established successfully when Mother, who is the Eve on Abel's side, and the four women as the Eve on the Cain side become completely one. Eve's role is to unite Cain and Abel and connect them to the Father, the true Adam. Japan must become one with Mother and embrace the rest of the world. (1991.06.15, Gomyeongseong Proclamation Ceremony, Clearstone Deer Park, Canada)

Chapter 2: The Proclamation of the Liberation of All Women

The founding of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia and the mission of Korean and Japanese women

I am healthy now, but I will not always be able to maintain my health. Physical health follows its natural course. Thus, I must start thinking about it. I am organizing things based on the future of the Unification Church. That is why I am training Mother at the podium. The church needs a foundation that it can trust as it has trusted me. Even when I am no longer present, that foundation needs to be able to do whatever it has to, here in Japan. I must prepare for that. I will create the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia, and it should not be a difficult thing to speak openly and confidently of one's beliefs in front of 150,000 people in Korea. (227-195, 1992.02.11)

We held the inaugural assembly of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia in Japan on September 17, 1991, and the inaugural assembly of the Korean chapter of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia on October 31 of the same year. Within seven months, we organized the inaugural assembly for the Women's Federation for World Peace, and over the next seven months, we will establish chapters throughout the world. On November 20, 1991, we held an assembly on the national level. No one, including the members in Japan, believed it was possible to hold that assembly so soon after inaugurating the Korean chapter. It had taken Japan five years to prepare for their first event. They asked how it could be possible to gather 10,000 people for a national assembly in just 20 days. But we did it, gathering 15,000 people for the nationwide rally of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia at the Seoul Olympic Fencing Arena. Four months later, about 160,000 people attended the inaugural assembly of the Women's Federation for World Peace. By Mother taking leadership in this way, she came to stand right by my side. To go to the Heavenly Kingdom, both of us have to go together, and the children will have to follow after us. We have to teach them about this. To accomplish this, we must liberate women. Historically, during the course of restoration through indemnity women have harbored a great deal of deep sorrow in their hearts. (229-312, 1992.04.13)

The time has come for Korean and Japanese women to join together and return to their original position. This was done through the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia, when Japanese women and Korean women united. By successfully delivering her three speeches before the public, True Mother established the condition of Cain-Abel unity on the national level. On April 10, 1992, in Seoul, more than 5,000 women came from Japan and joined the women of Korea for the first assembly of the Women's Federation for World Peace. That is how Korea became the elder Eve. By uniting, centered on the restored elder Eve, and with Japan in the position of Cain, Cain and Abel became one on the national level. Because the women of those two countries united with True Mother, who has the authority to unite all women, they could stand in the position to represent her. Thus, the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia laid the foundation for the establishment of the Women's Federation for World Peace. Until now Eve

has been following me, but with the declarations at these assemblies Mother now stands at my side. In that way, we have established the authority of the Parents. (229-343, 1992.04.13)

In September 1991, we were in Alaska. We needed to prepare to unite the women of Japan and Korea, because Japan is in the position of the Eve nation. But at the time I could not see a way forward. Still, there was no one but I who could make it happen. I needed Mother to go to Japan and hold an assembly of 7,000 people. When I first asked her to do this, she probably felt as if lightning had struck her. It is not easy to address an assembly of that size, especially in the presence of the prime minister's wife. But she accepted and carried out her task decisively. Returning to Korea, we connected this first assembly in Japan to the Korean launch of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia. After doing this, we established the Women's Federation for World Peace. Although Korea was the nation that took the lead in founding this organization, it could not be limited to Korea or even to Asia. Through the Women's Federation for World Peace we are aiming to bring peace throughout the world. (232-196, 1992.07.06)

I told Mother that she needed to study Japanese, because she would have to make speeches in Japanese, representing me, once we reached the world level. In Japan, if you want to move and melt hearts, you cannot do it by speaking only Korean. I knew that Mother was neither born in Japan nor had studied Japanese for more than a short time. Nevertheless, I told her that if she could speak in fluent Japanese, the Japanese people would be bowled over. That was why I told her to study Japanese. Mother accepted unconditionally. She just said yes without complaining and followed me completely. In this respect, Mother is truly remarkable. (258-330, 1994.03.20)

The first time Mother stood before the public was at the assembly of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia, at the NK Hall of the Tokyo Bay Hotel in front of an audience of 7,000. It was her first time speaking in public, but she carried herself with such dignity. How could she do that? Mother had attended many international assemblies with me, so she already had experienced being the center of attention among prominent guests. Also, when I gave speeches, she listened and analyzed them. She learned that people are more attentive to your speeches if you vary the tone of your voice, going up and down. She saw that a smooth and sincere delivery would impress and move an audience. (257-288, 1994.03.16)

Japanese women and Korean women must join together and unite with True Mother. That is restoration. As a man, I restored the first and second sons. However, it is for Mother to restore the first and second daughters, centering on women. I carried out the historical battle to have Abel restore the realm of the elder son. I restored the positions of the sons and returned them to God. I finished my part of the work. Centering on the United States and the Soviet Union, the authority of the elder son has been restored. The time has come, therefore, for Mother to do her part in restoration. Thus, I am having Mother connect women from two providential nations, Korea and Japan. For this, I am bequeathing my victorious foundation to her in my mission as the Messiah so that she can create her own foundation of victory as Eve. (224-092, 1991.11.23)

The age of women is coming. So I gave the direction to activate the women in the church. Japan was chosen as the Eve nation in relation to Korea, the Adam nation, so we had to begin in Japan. Mother has to bind together all of the women of Japan, both in the internal realm of the church and in the external realm of society. Therefore, I called Japanese women to the training center on Jeju Island and instructed them on matters that had remained unclear. I then assigned 100 women to each prefecture in Japan. Japan is an island nation, so in order to bring the Japanese to Korea I had to begin the work on a Korean island before bringing them to the mainland. I chose Jeju Island. Mother had to function as a bridge between the Japanese women and the Korean women of the Unification Church, so that the Korean women would accept the Japanese women. If they had not, it would have been a big problem. The Korean women had to prepare themselves to accept the Japanese women. The sooner they were prepared to accept them, the quicker the Japanese and Korean women would unite. (222-218, 1991.11.03)

Initiating this movement to unite women from Korea and Japan was a record-breaking, historic event. It was like throwing heavenly fire into the world. That is why people's experiences of those events will resonate forever, like some melodies that capture our hearts. Just by looking at photographs of the event, one can see that it was an occasion filled with grace. The intensity of those assemblies reached such a peak. Does the love your mother gave you ever disappear from your heart? Does the love your parents gave you ever disappear from your heart? When lovers look at a picture of themselves, they are reminded of the love that never disappears from their hearts. Likewise, anyone whose heart was deeply moved by that speech, which was so connected to Heaven's love, is reminded, even by looking at the photographs, of the grace that was present on that day. It is their connection to God's love that makes the teachings of the saints and sages so precious. Mother's speech is so precious because she speaks with a heart of love that connects us to God. Therefore, her speech transcends history. At any time, you can connect to that moment and the value that resides there. It has the power to revive people. (237-051, 1992.11.10)

As Japan is the Eve nation, Korea stands in the position of Adam. As Korea stands in Abel's position, Japan stands in Cain's position. Therefore, you Koreans must convey Abel's tradition and spirit to Japan. Eve fell when she was 16 years old. Therefore, Korea needed a virgin girl to become a patriot imbued

with the tradition and spirit to offer everything for the love of her nation. That girl was Yu Gwan-sun. Japanese women have to inherit her spirit; otherwise, there is no way for them to connect to Korea. So I discreetly sent some people to begin a movement to lift up Yu Gwan-sun in Japan. I told them, "Engraft Japanese women to the spirit of the martyr Yu Gwan-sun." I am the only one who can do this kind of work. No one else can. If Japanese women engraft to this spirit, Japan and Korea will become one. Therefore, I sent Mother to Japan in September 1991 to establish the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia. (229-150, 1992.04.11)

The founding of WFWP and the proclamation of the liberation of women

The satanic world, centering on women, went a different direction and created this wicked, fallen world. By sending women in the wrong direction, Satan succeeded in creating a treacherous world. The satanic world created a treacherous world's end by focusing on sending on women in the wrong direction. Illicit love centering on women has brought about this disastrous result. All women are covered with wounds as a result of free sex, and the path to return to Heaven has become blocked. However, the Unification Principle fully teaches how to distinguish oneself from this world and shows the way to Heaven. It is a path 180 degrees the other direction. The family unit was lost through a woman, so in the end it must be restored through a woman. Women are the center. That is why through True Mother, the Movement for the Liberation of Women can be proclaimed centering on WFWP. During the time I was paying indemnity over a period of forty years, Mother had not yet appeared. Only now that she has appeared, has a victorious foundation been laid. After World War II, Mother could come forward in a liberated position to represent the foundation of the free world, the realm of the Bride. Mother also had to be put forward because the opposing side had to offer indemnity. Now that the age for anyone to oppose has passed, a liberation of women is being carried out centering on Mother. Therefore, this women's movement is an absolute movement. (242-144, 1993.01.01)

Since the creation of the world, God has not had women. He has not had children. Satan stole the women away from Him. Therefore, until God finds a woman, a woman cannot have dignity as a woman, and that is why they have been persecuted. By establishing the Mother and proclaiming the liberation of all women, the age of women can come. The sun rises in the East, but when all women greet that sun and take it into their womb, it becomes the textbook for building families and the standard for building a nation. (249-050, 1993.10.07)

Now is the zenith of the age of women. We know how Reverend Moon's fortune goes. We have antennas. Hence, because Japan is the Eve nation, I have founded the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia centering on Japan.

The Women's Federation for Peace in Asia was inaugurated on October 31, 1991, in Korea and the Women's Federation for World Peace was inaugurated on April 10, 1992. Now heavenly fortune can return. Due to Britain's failure as the Eve nation, Satan's world entered Asia and betrayed the heavenly nation; I had to restore this through indemnity. This means that Japan imitated British civilization. Amaterasu-omikami (天照大御神) is a sun goddess in Japanese mythology. The power structure based on her led the Japanese to colonize Asia in a way similar to that of the British colonials. Thus, I designated Japan as the Eve nation. How did Japan succeed at grasping the global economy after 1978? It was inevitable. When Eve fell, the satanic world stole all material things. America is the archangel nation. The West has people who are externally oriented, and the East has internally oriented people. Therefore, the only foundation the West has control over is the material side. We can see that on the foundation of material abundance, America has risen to the position of the most powerful nation in the world. However, this will not last.

Centering on WFWP-Japan, I founded WFWP in Korea on April 10. Korea is the center. I established Mother here and proclaimed the worldwide movement for the liberation of women in God's name and True Parents' names. (242033, 1992.12.27)

Up until now, there was no path for a woman to be liberated. The liberation of women is possible with the emergence of a perfected Adam. Mother can stand next to me from a standard that accepts the value of a unity with and equality to a perfected Adam. If the Mother did not stand next to Adam, then Adam, who was on the way to God's throne, would have to turn back and re-inherit the exit path and would not be able to connect with her. Now that it is this era, Mother can stand on an equal plane and represent women to proclaim the liberation of all women.

For the head to be supported, the head, body, and legs must be connected. If Mother is the head, then all the women of the world are the body and legs. If they are not liberated, then there is no place for Mother to stand. Therefore, with Mother standing in front of me and with the Proclamation of the Liberation of All Women, we welcome the age of liberation -- liberation of God, the cosmos, the nation, the people, the tribe, the family and the individual. It is the restoration of the eight stages that everyone has failed to achieve. (249-097, 1993.10.08)

I brought all my enemies on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, nation and world to surrender, and in the process I restored 4,000 years of history. Now I have returned to Korea. The time has come to press for the unification of North and South Korea and God's liberation. After enduring 40 years of indemnity, the unification of heaven and earth, which should have been achieved shortly after World War II, is finally within reach. Christianity is the Bride religion, in the position of Eve, but it has not fulfilled the mission of the Bride. Hence, True Mother must fulfill that mission and restore Korea. Christianity in the position of the Bride religion should have done this, but it could not. Mother must indemnify this, and the Women's Federation for World Peace in Korea, Japan, the United States and Europe must indemnify the failure of Christianity to resolve this issue for Korea's sake. At the end of World War II, there was an opportunity to unify the seven providential nations in that conflict: Korea, Japan, the United States, Great Britain, Germany, France and Italy, even nations that had been enemies. That opportunity was lost, however, and the providence at that time ended in failure. This will have to be restored. Indemnity will need to be paid.

That is to say, Korea, Great Britain, the United States and France failed to receive me and attend me as the Bridegroom following the liberation of Korea. The Bridegroom was lost and was later found again. Although they did not know it, for 40 years I prayed for those seven nations. To take responsibility for their failures, I had to send Mother out to stand in front of the public for seven months and establish the Unification Church in place of the one unified world that should have arisen following the end of World War II. I placed Mother in the position to represent all the leaders of the world, and in that mission she was victorious. Now we can march forward victoriously into the era when we can unite the world. This will take place in the era of women. Since that era has come, I established the Women's Federation for World Peace in 1992. (239-242, 1992.11.25)

Now that the Women's Federation for World Peace has been established, all women can come to God's side. Humanity is the vertical and horizontal expansion of the original family unit. No matter how many people make up the human race, the family is its core. To restore this family, I am dispatching tribal messiahs. There are three positions on the horizontal level: family messiahs representing the formation stage; tribal messiahs representing the growth stage; and national messiahs representing the completion stage. All of these positions must connect together. As they expand horizontally, they must inherit everything through the vertical stages. This is how we built a world-level foundation. True Mother had to connect this foundation to seven nations. Eve's foundation thereby was re-established horizontally centered on Korea. On that foundation, True Parents were declared to the world. (248-127, 1993.08.01)

Based on True Parents' standard, we must now establish a world-level domain of kingship for God's Kingdom. Once we have a world-level foundation of a new group of people in nations throughout the world, North Korea's Kim II-sung can be brought to surrender. That is how the position of True Parents and the position of the false parents can finally be reversed for the people of North and South Korea. However, this cannot be done by men alone. We need to make this happen quickly in the mother's era. This has been the goal of the providence I have led since 1991. Thus, on April 10, 1992, with the establishment of the Women's Federation for World Peace, Adam's nation and Eve's nation completely united centered on Mother. On that basis, Kim II-sung is bound to retreat. Never before has a victorious Eve existed in the fallen world. Now that the victorious Eve has come, the fallen world, Satan's world, must disappear. (230-286, 1992.05.08)

Mother's year was 1992. In that year she became the liberator of all the women of the world. The inaugural assembly of the Women's Federation for World Peace was held in Seoul, Korea, on April 10, 1992, with women representatives of 72 nations in attendance. At the assembly Mother declared, "Let us now liberate all the women of the world." The way this can be done is by following Mother. This means that women must change the color of their hearts to be the same as Mother's. Mother is the central root, the central stem and the central bud. She is the one who can unite all the women of the world. Within just a year she already has made this organization, the Women's Federation for World Peace, into one of the most powerful women's organizations in the world. The rapid establishment of this women's organization shows that God's final providence is to connect to all women. (248-126, 1993.08.01)

In 1992, on the victorious foundation of having embraced both the right-wing and the left-wing, I finally declared the arrival of True Mother on the world stage. The true mother had been lost and was unknown to the Israelites during the Old Testament Age, and she again was lost to the New Testament Age, but finally on April 10, 1992, I declared to the world that the True Mother had come. This took place at the inauguration of the Women's Federation for World Peace, where we also proclaimed the liberation of women. Mother was introduced to the world, and women of the seven nations involved in World War II, represented by women from 72 nations, united with her. When I claimed that we would gather 160,000 women, everyone thought I was dreaming. Yet we made strong winds blow, and women from all backgrounds came. People came to these events without realizing why they were there. The night before the event they could not sleep. In this way we reached that numerical goal. That is how the Women's Federation for World Peace was born. We announced the liberation of women all over the world. In one year, we overcame 6,000 years of pain and sorrow. We proclaimed the arrival of unity and equality for women, which they had been awaiting for 6,000 years. (245-140, 1993.02.28)

Once I had Mother appear before the public, Eve could be restored and the archangel had to follow her. Now an amazing fortune will come to Mother. The archangel has no relationship with True Parents in blood and flesh. He must be given rebirth. However, Mother cannot do that by herself. That is why we are encouraging women from across the world to act as Mother's second selves. This is how the age of women is arriving in this era. (231-310, 1992.06.21)

How can Mother win over all men, who are in the position of the archangel? If women everywhere unite, they can bring the archangel to surrender voluntarily. So women must bond tightly together and stir up their power like a hurricane throughout the nation, so that men are not able to budge. This will unify the Korean Peninsula. To support this on the external level, I have been weaving all the nations of the world together through the Women's Federation for World Peace. When the people of the world listen to Mother's speech and receive the Blessing, they will become one. This is the time when women will take the lead. Now the people of the world will be restored by listening to Mother's words, the words of the heavenly Eve. (236-019, 1992.11.02)

Because Mother appeared in public and proclaimed the age of women, all the warts attached to individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world and the cosmos throughout history -- even warts connected to hell -- finally can be cut off. We have to indemnify them all. False parents came and infected every level, creating hell all the way up to the world level. However, as True Parents we are clearing up everything. In addition, by engrafting every family to ourselves, we are elevating them to the position of unfallen Adam and Eve's family. This is how we are transferring all our victorious conditions to everyone. (233-189, 1992.08.01)

On April 10, 1992, I proclaimed the era of the liberation of women. That day, when Mother was reading her speech, it rained heavily. As her husband, in addition to giving a supporting speech, I was asked to write a commemorative message in Chinese calligraphy. I wrote "The Advent of the Age of Women throughout the World." That was the day when Mother first appeared on the world stage. Ever since that day, whenever we had to carry out providential responsibilities, she has taken on enormously difficult missions, such as the recent 120-nation speaking tour. After finishing that tour, she returned to Korea but did not rest; instead she went on to speak to students at colleges and universities, proclaiming the women's era. (484-048, 2005.01.20)

Reverend Moon has attained everything throughout the 70 years of his life on a perilous path. Adam and Eve became God's enemies, and everything split due to them. However, True Parents united centering on heaven and earth; they united centering on man and woman; their minds and bodies united centering on absolute love as one original horizontal couple. Therefore, my direct lineage is the mainstream, and the accompanying lineage is the restored families. When these families go to the spirit world, the gates of Heaven will open. All realms of persecution will transform into the realms of liberation, and Heaven's gates will open automatically. That time has come.

After establishing WFWP, I proclaimed the era of liberation of all women on the relative standard which represents the Federation for World Peace. Failing to do so would have allowed devils to create shadows that they could hide in all over the world. I am simultaneously making this proclamation in every nation where the Unification Church flag flies. Thus, the era has arrived in which the devils in those countries, upon hearing the proclamation, have no choice but to retreat. (230-348, 1992.05.10)

The meaning of the declaration of the liberation of women

The women of the world made all kinds of rough waves, which I had to traverse in order to resolve the issues that have existed throughout history. I could not fall into their traps; I had to overcome them and liberate them. I had to lead them as an older brother leads his younger sisters; I had to guide them as a husband guides his wife; and I had to educate them as a father educates his daughters. Most especially, I had to lead Mother in this way. Consequently, when she could stand on an equal footing with me, on April 10, 1992, I declared the liberation of women. The fact that I declared the liberation of all women worldwide means that the persecution that the Unification Church has been enduring for 40 years is at an end. The church has overcome every level of persecution from the world -- from the level of the individual to that of the family, tribe, people, nation, and world. We have recovered the domain of John the Baptist as the Women's Federation for World Peace, which represents the Christian cultural sphere centered on the Unification Church. We did that not on the national level, but on the world level. (245-137, 1993.02.28)

The unified world was supposed to have been completed during the seven years from 1945 to 1952, but that opportunity was lost. Therefore, we now need to complete it during the seven years from 1994 to 2000. Our task during these seven years is to unite the world. Following World War II, the Christian cultural sphere, which is the Bride's cultural sphere, failed to unite with the Bridegroom. Therefore, for these seven years, from 1994 to 2000, the women of the world must unite and attend the perfected Adam who can make an impact on the family, the society and even the world. Now is the time when we can

restore the opportunity that was lost after World War II to achieve the goal of building a unified world that fulfills the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven. This can be done by elevating Adam, who is already victorious on the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation and world, and by paying off all the debts that the bride nations incurred when they did not receive the Lord, on the levels of the family, tribe, people, nation and world. That is why I declared that this is the era for the liberation of women. (254-286, 1994.02.16)

Christianity is the religion of the Bride. This is why they await the Groom. That is the main point in the Bible. Beginning from Judaism, the Christian religion of Jesus has focused on the Messiah, the Groom. To expand the foundation to welcome the husband on the family, tribal, people, national, and global levels, Christianity has walked a historical path of restoration through indemnity. The central figures in the Bible have walked such a path.

Christianity pioneered its way, and then right after World War II a united world was achieved. If Christianity had united with me then, within seven years we would have accomplished the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in Heaven. That was 1945 to 1952.

If the Bride had united with the Groom, then all Christianity around the world would have united. At that time, there were more than one billion Christians. On that kind of foundation, it would have been possible for me to proclaim the mission of the tribal messiah that I am teaching now. If that had happened, it wouldn't have taken even seven years. We would have been able to bring the entire world to God's side with one stroke. However, they all opposed me and I was cast into the wilderness. By doing so, they also cast away God. God was also in such a position.

Then next time I was able to land again was 1992. Because the foundation of Eve and the foundation of the Bride were lost, it took 40 years, from 1952 to 1992, to re-create it. (259-138, 1994.04.02)

By Mother accomplishing Eve's responsibility, a movement for the liberation of women can unfold. Within three years, through the liberation of women we need to search for a nation. We held a wedding ceremony, since we have entered the era of finding a nation. By finding and returning 360,000 couples in Satan's realm to God, the satanic world is crumbling. Now families around the world can soar. If this happens, then it will become a great stream and there will be no opposition, because people have realized that Reverend Moon's family ideal is a shortcut to the liberation of humankind and a world of peace. (272-050, 1995.08.30)

In order to restore the authority of the elder son, the authority of the parents, and the authority of the king centering on True Parents, it is necessary for True Mother to be elevated to a position equal to mine. That is why we established the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia centered on Japan, the Eve nation. The Eve-realm Japanese women, in the position of younger sister, must go through restoration through indemnity with the Korean women, in the position of elder sisters, to restore the authority of the elder sister centering on the Women's Federation for World Peace, which was established on the foundation of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia. This is the age of the mother who can embrace both the elder sister and the younger sister. The Korean women are in the position of elder sister.

Japan, as the Eve nation in the younger sister position, had to set up the foundation for restoration. Mother inherited this foundation and liberated the women of Korea. Then she liberated the women of the United States, the women of Europe, Russia, and Oceania. Amazingly, she liberated all the women of the world, and the position of the bride from the Christian realm was restored 47 years after it was lost. With the completion of this work, for the first time Mother restored the world horizontally to the same place it had been in at the end of World War II.

Therefore the conditions present at the end of World War II, including the lost realm of the Bride, were restored centering on Mother, and for the first time the standard where the Bride and Bridegroom could be united was restored and the free world was liberated. This marked the beginning of a new age when Mother could move on an equal plane with me. (243-296, 1993.01.28)

Now that a period of 40 years of indemnity, from 1952 until 1992, has been completed to restore the failure of the world-level age of the blessing that would have come if the Catholic Church and the Protestant churches had united with me after the end of World War II, we can finally declare the end of Satan's lineage. This is the providence of Cain and Abel. How are Cain and Abel united into one? The center that unites them is the mother. In 1992, for the first time Mother could stand on my left side horizontally. She could come before God standing next to me horizontally. Until that she had connected to God through me vertically. She was liberated with the establishment of the Women's Federation for World Peace in 1992. After that, by giving the Blessing to all humankind, passing through 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 and then the seventh year, 1998, Satan's lineage finally was eliminated. (306-135, 1998.09.20)

Chapter 3: True Mother's World Speaking Tours

Inauguration of the Women's Federation for World Peace and the world tours

You don't know how surprised Mother was when I said that we are going to have a national speaking tour for the inauguration of the Women's Federation for World Peace in Korea. She asked, "Are you going to do it, or am I?" So I answered, "You are." Then she said she was in trouble. This is how we started out, and after the 60-city tour the entire nation was swept up as if by a storm. After the assemblies in Korea, I said to her, "This time, you have to go and do it again in Japan, and in Japanese, too!" Mother is not fluent in Japanese. She barely knows how to read it. She studied the basics of the Japanese language for a few months, but she does not know the language that well. That is why she first thought, "Isn't it likely that I will be asked to say the first few lines in Japanese, after which the interpreter will take over?"

She had so much work to do. Usually speech scripts are full of side notes, but I asked her to erase them all and to come to the podium with nothing extra written on it. She did as I had asked, and she studied the script zealously. Japanese members were heard to ask, "Is True Mother really going to give a speech in Japanese?" That was something that could not have been imagined even in their wildest dreams. Could anyone among you study English for just one month and then give a speech in English? It would be impossible to do so after only a month or two of studying.

Mother, however, is good at many things. For the first assembly in Japan, 50,000 people were gathered in Tokyo Dome. None of the members believed it when they heard that Mother was actually going to be in Japan and going to speak in Japanese. However, when they heard her speak, they found that her pronunciation was immaculate. That is why they applauded her after she had read only one or two lines. They thought to themselves that something unimaginable in this world was actually happening. Because her pronunciation was even clearer than that of a native speaker, the audience cheered her. Knowing that she was not fluent in Japanese, they hung on to her every word and repeated it after her, thinking all the time, "Where will she make a mistake?" It was like climbing a precarious hill. You have no idea how serious the audience was. With a single united heart, they followed the speech, word by word, and at the end they exclaimed, "Oh, well done!" and they gave her a standing ovation. That was what the first assembly was like. In doing something, the first time is always the hardest. After that, she completely swept across the ten cities. That was truly inspiring. This is indeed a moving anecdote.

When I told her that she had to go to America next, she was surprised yet again. Then I added, "In America, you have to give the speeches in English!" When you see Mother delivering a speech, you find that her pronunciation is very good and she appears fluent. She so shocked the English speakers that it felt like the entire country of America had been shaken up. At first, they had thought, "What can an Asian woman possibly do when she comes here?"

However, her voice and her attitude were both very good. Since she had accompanied me for 30 years when we attended thousands of international assemblies, she knew all about the manners she should adopt when she stood in front of an audience. She is perfect in every way, in her attitude, in the way she speaks English, and even in the pose she assumes when she is being applauded. (238-344, 1992.11.22)

When Mother was asked to step forward and deliver a speech, everyone saw that she is so beautiful and that her voice is so lovely and priceless that no amount of money could possibly buy it. Just as wonderful singers insure their voices, there were people who asked why True Mother's voice was not insured in case it grew hoarse. When she appeared wearing a jade-green skirt, everyone was amazed at her. I did not know Mother was handsome, but since everyone says she is, I have decided to think her handsome too. (232-050, 1992.07.01)

A 1992 Women's Federation for World Peace event in Washington, D.C., generated a lot of publicity around Mother. Everywhere Mother went, many organizations honored her and presented her with plaques. At the WFWP event in Los Angeles, True Mother was awarded a plaque engraved "Mother of the World." Although the attendees did not know the Principle, the president of an organization symbolizing women throughout America presented the plaque and praised True Mother. (238-347, 1992.11.22)

The era in which we do outreach work to individuals has passed. We have to reach entire families. We have to turn them around to fulfill the Principle through the Blessing. In order to turn the family around, we first must turn women around. Since the first family became Satan's, beginning with Eve, and then expanded to the world, according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, to turn this situation around Mother must take the lead in the world. She has to transform women around the world so that they will be able to turn their families around. For that purpose, through the WFWP Mother swept through Korea, Japan, the United States and Europe. In the future she will make a trip through the surrounding nations and major cities of all six continents. It soon will be said that Mother, as the woman who initiated a global movement for world peace and is its strongest advocate, is the world's foremost woman. Sons and daughters naturally connect to their mother. So when Mother achieves that level, Satan's world will turn around 180 degrees and follow her. (238-076, 1992.11.19)

Throughout my entire life of more than 70 years, I have built a foundation for the Will. Yet, over the last seven months I bequeathed all of it to True Mother. In just seven months I passed to her my entire 70-year foundation for the sake of liberating women. I began this process on April 10, 1992, and will end it in December when the rallies for the Women's Federation for World Peace that have been taking place throughout May, June, July, August, September, October and November conclude. My desire is to liberate all women; they must be liberated. (239-201, 1992.11.25)

Mother is an object of beauty in the eyes of men, who represent the archangel. Just as the archangel followed Eve around in the Garden of Eden, men are in a state where they cannot resist Mother. That is why Mother toured 60 locations, including 21 cities, and no men opposed her work. If men welcome Mother, it means they are entering the realm of the archangel on God's side, where they cannot oppose her. Furthermore, Mother has a very good reputation. So when men stand on the stage, they just sing her praises. Mother's appointment as president of the WFWP means that she has emerged as the woman who represents all the women of the world. Hence, a movement is taking place in which all women in the spirit world and on earth are competing to attend her as the queen. (231-335, 1992.07.01)

When God directed me to work for women's liberation, I organized rallies for the Women's Federation for World Peace and accompanied Mother, attending her. When I was in America, I returned home to East Garden at 11:00 p.m. after one particular WFWP event. After speaking to the members who were gathered there, when I looked at the clock it was already 12:20 a.m. I was very tired, but I went straight to the next venue so that I could arrive there by 3:30 a.m. Do you think my life is the path of the Lord or the path of a servant? Why did I leave to go there at such an early hour in the middle of the night? I could have slept that night and left in the morning at a comfortable hour. In fact, my car almost had an accident on the way and could have rolled over. What did I gain by pushing myself like this? I was setting an example to teach all men of the world how to serve and attend their wives. I knew that the time had come for women to stand in an equal position with men and to play a major role in the fulfillment of God's Will, so I wanted to establish a tradition for women to settle into their rightful position. That is why I am doing all these things. (232-055, 1992.07.01)

We are holding a commemorative ceremony here for the workshop participants. What food have you prepared there? Bring everything on that table here, and take everything here back there. Now that they have been exchanged, share them all with the thought that Mother is giving out things from here and that Father is giving out things from there. Please do that, and thank you for taking the trouble. Mother, finish your work quickly and come back. I want to see you as soon as possible. From now on, you too need to celebrate such joyous days together with True Parents. Like a wedding feast, you should celebrate together. You should know that we are the only people in the world who hold such ceremonies together. Not even America can do such a thing. It is only we who can do it. [Father, I will see you soon!] Yes. Thank you. Mother's voice is so sweet and familiar. [Father, be happy today!] Yes, thank you. I too wish you success today, Mother. I will pray for you. Today is a day on which heaven and earth are rejoicing. (235-356, 1992.10.26, Phone call with True Mother, holding the Women's Federation for World Peace inaugural assemblies in the United States.

Mother, congratulations! [We are finished in France.] You put out the fire on the burning house? [Things are interesting here in France. People think we are holding the assembly at the hotel we reserved earlier, so they are carrying out a demonstration in front of it.] You know you are famous if they carry out demonstrations when you come. I think they are holding the demonstration just to make you famous, Mother. [I have become famous even in France.] France is one of the most wicked places because it has gone over to Satan's side.

They will oppose you even more than Germany. Now Italy, on the other hand, will be fine!

How wonderful do you feel, now that the assemblies in Europe are done! You will next go to the Soviet Union and also Australia and New Zealand for the assemblies, so Mother's name will become even more famous than mine in the entire world. I have not been to Australia or New Zealand, but Mother will have visited every place in the world through these assemblies. The fact that Mother's name has been elevated higher than my name proves that the age of women has come. Do you think so too, Mother? [Yes! Father, then I will see you tomorrow in Italy.] Yes, see you in Rome. (237-178, 1992.11.16, Phone call with True Mother, holding the Women's Federation for World Peace inaugural assemblies in Europe)

Why do you think Mother spoke in Japanese and in English at the Women's Federation for World Peace events? It was because True Parents want to communicate with their sons and daughters in heart. That is why Mother used Japanese and made the necessary preparations. Likewise, in English-speaking regions, she spoke in English, because she was there to meet the representatives of her sons and daughters. Hearing Mother speak their language, they no longer would feel orphaned but, rather, like orphans who had found their mother. Ever since the Fall, human beings have been like orphans, kidnapped by Satan and assimilated into his culture. However, here they could meet their mother again and be saved. The fact that True Mother spoke in Japanese to her children is amazing. From God's viewpoint, the Japanese

people should sing Mother's praises. Mother wanted so badly to communicate totally with her children, who do not even know that they were orphaned, that she was willing to learn their language. This would be impossible if Mother were not the original mother of humankind. Would a false mother make such efforts when she does not even speak the language? If you recognize people as your lost children, you must teach them, even if it requires you to learn their language. That is the love found within the realm of a parent's heart. (239-116, 1992.11.24)

The leaders of our church in the United States heard and fully inherited Mother's teachings that she previously had presented at Women's Federation for World Peace events in Japan. When True Mother was speaking in Japan, the U.S. church leaders from all 50 states, including state leaders and American Freedom Coalition leaders, listened to her speeches every day. The local church members in all 50 states must listen to her speeches too. In addition, the missionaries throughout the world must gather and listen to Mother's speeches in the United States. In this way, just as the Eve nation must inherit the tradition of Adam's nation, the archangel nation must inherit the tradition of the Eve nation, and all the nations of the world must inherit the tradition of the archangel nation. There can be no objections to this. In this way, Mother's speaking tour indeed became a worldwide workshop. (236-036, 1992.11.02)

Beginning in November 1992, we will launch Mother's WFWP world speaking tour, starting with four European nations. I will not be going with her this time. I am placing Mother in the forefront, so that people will be given a chance to attend her completely and thereby open the gate for women worldwide. I even directed Mother to make preparations to speak at an event in Russia. Following this, she will continue with lightning speed even to China and North Korea. When women fight, they can reconcile after shedding tears, but men are liable to continue fighting to the point of bloodshed. That is why women must be in the forefront. The world of peace begins with love; for this reason, we must have women in the lead. (236-256, 1992.11.08)

Women's Federation for World Peace events were held in eight cities in America, and I am planning to hold these events in eight European cities as well. In Western society, America is the subject partner and Europe is the object partner. Your suggestion to hold events in only four or five cities in Europe shows that you do not understand this relationship. Although Europe is a continent comprising numerous nations, we should consider it as one nation. When I speak of Europe, I do not mean only Britain, France and Italy. So, just as we held events in eight cities in America, we must hold events in eight cities in Europe as well, in order to match America. This year, we must make our way even to the Soviet Union. All enemy countries must unite and then fulfill their duties as filial children, patriots, saints and divine children. On this foundation, we should lay the foundation for the liberation of the fatherland. When the history of strife among enemy nations is recast into a new tradition centered on God, God will be able to reign over them. (236-121, 1992.11.04)

Mother created a sensation worldwide when she held rallies for the Women's Federation for World Peace. In Rome, Mother received giant plaques from four different organizations. Now women throughout the world should completely unite with Mother. The whole world must be like one string of pearls. Accordingly, we must accomplish what Jesus, the Bridegroom, and Judaism, the Bride religion, could not do, which is to unite and then bring unity on the world stage. (238-018, 1992.11.19)

Mother will be leaving for China to hold a meeting of the Women's Federation for World Peace. I am saying that we will hold the event in China, a communist nation. Can we say the word "God" in that nation? Neither the Communist Party nor the military authorities will permit it. The Communist Party officials spent a week going over Mother's speech. Yet, we included all the key points about God that Mother has been delivering wherever she speaks. This is not a dream; Mother is really speaking in that communist nation. (241-141, 1992.12.20)

Mother will go to China to hold an event for the WFWP there. This is no easy feat. It is something not even the Korean government can do. We have overcome all kinds of adversities to make it happen, but we are surely going to hold this event. It will take place in the Great Hall of the People, where the Communist Party holds its national conventions. We are trying to arrange for the participation of the most prominent women in China and Chinese women who speak English to participate. We have already held an event in Russia and will hold this one in China soon; so, next, we must hold one in North Korea. It is women who must accomplish this. (241-027, 1992.12.19)

We have hosted the Women's Federation for World Peace assemblies in seven nations, including America and Germany. We also have held one in Russia, and now we are going to host one in Oceania as well. Even if Father does not go there, Oceania will be connected to us. Through the work being carried out by True Mother, the responsibility that the Christian cultural realm failed to fulfill for the Groom 47 years ago can now be fulfilled by the Bride and Groom, and on that victorious foundation, the world can be connected once again. By us so doing, the free world will be restored to life. (239-307, 1992.12.09)

We need to create an environment where God can freely come to His family on earth. If it were not for the Fall, God would have been able to freely visit Adam and Eve at any time. The fallen world, however,

is blocked by Satan's cosmic walls, global walls, national walls, racial walls, tribal walls, family walls, and individual walls. Because all of these walls block the way, we need to build an international highway through them.

This is the work that True Parents must carry out worldwide. They must create the model of a perfected family, and unite the families of the five billion world population on that foundation. Centering on this model family, Eve and her sons and daughters must first unite and then restore the husband. Since the husband is the archangel, he must be connected through Eve. That is the work True Mother is carrying out right now.

Through the liberation of women, all women in the world and their children are seen as Mother's incarnations, who are one with her. Though children were born from the womb, they must pass through the womb of True Parents once again.

It is necessary for them to return to the place of the seed in the bone marrow of True Father, who is Adam before the Fall, and be born again. This is because that is where they started out.

Because Adam and Eve went to hell together with Satan through the Fall, in order for them to return to God, they need to return to the woman's womb centering on True Parents. There the son and daughter must unite as one and be absolutely grafted to True Parents, even at the risk of losing their life or even their head. (237-243, 1992.11.17)

This age in which the providence of the salvation of family is considered most important is the Completed Testament Age, whose center is Mother and not Father. In this regard, the world peace movement is one in which women worldwide are brought together by being connected to the Women's Federation for World Peace centering on Mother, so that the family can be restored based on that foundation, and through that movement the tribal messiah also can be brought into the family. Therefore, we need to carry out the Women's Federation for World Peace movement worldwide centering on women, and at the same time we also need to unite centering on the tribal messiah. Since the Completed Testament Age is an era in which Mother is the center, we are starting this work centering on Mother. The tribal messiah stands in the position of perfected Adam on behalf of the father, who is in the position of the archangel, and brings the family under his control. Since this is a worldwide movement, we are carrying out the Women's Federation for World Peace movement to bring the mothers together on a global level. And all women in the world will begin this movement centering on True Mother. (244-037, 1993.01.29)

You cannot achieve God's Will by fighting. It is not a matter of restoring a nation through physical struggle. It involves bringing the nation to voluntary submission. Therefore, it is all about becoming the rightful man, the rightful husband, the rightful wife, the rightful sons and daughters, and the rightful parents, in order to expand the rightful traditions throughout one's family and one's country and thus create a model that leads to the ideal world.

All I need to do is teach. It is up to the women to actually carry it out, centering on Mother. I am playing the role of the archangel who serves Mother. I am attending her. Have you ever seen a man deliver words of encouragement in which he does nothing but praise a woman? Listen to this address. I am praising Mother as the queen of the universe. She is the first woman in history to be praised this much by me. She is setting a record. (232-034, 1992.07.01)

From now on, Mother will lead the work of liberating women. Wherever she goes, she will be welcomed by all women. The walls enclosing women will be brought down. The fact that such a thing is now happening is truly amazing. Mother is confidently stepping up, with the world under her feet, as the standard-bearer to liberate innumerable women who have lived until now namelessly and under oppression. In light of this, won't the women of the coming generations feel only too proud to follow in Mother's footsteps? When you think about that, you will come to feel so enthusiastic that you will want to pioneer this path most zealously. (237-108, 1992.11.13)

From now on, all women in the world need to follow Reverend Moon and True Mother. In the Garden of Eden, there were only two people, Adam and Eve. And once the family settles down, the woman is elevated to a higher position within it. That is why we in the Unification Church instruct every man who has received the Blessing to venerate his wife as his mother for three years, and not to forget that. (233-349, 1992.08.02)

True Parents and the Completed Testament Age and university speaking tours

True Mother proclaimed "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age." What is the nature of the Completed Testament Age? God is beginning life based on love. The magnificent work of God's creation is still moving forward. The completion of the ideal of love, namely the four-position foundation and the human portion of responsibility, marks the completion of the ideal of creation. God and humankind couldn't live centering on love but now there is a new era, an era that could not have been achieved during

the historical ages until now. The beginning of the family of God is the start of a revival, centering on God. Accordingly, people and God become one centering on love and the family. But it is not our family alone. We must go forward side by side with the family of God's nation as it begins. This is the world of the absolute authority of God. By proclaiming True Parents' ideas and by proclaiming the Completed Testament Age, we are rising above Satan's world. (248-012, 1993.05.30)

The 50 states of America were so enthusiastic about Mother. They all made plaques for her, sometimes several plaques in one place, and because she did not have time to receive them all, blessed children stood in two lines and received them on her behalf when she made her entrance. That is how they welcomed her. They were competing with one another to make their names known. It was a historic event. Mother was on a speaking tour of America for the proclamation of "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age," and they were all competing to take part in any way possible in that historic event. (252-239, 1994.01.01)

July 28, 1993 was the day Mother proclaimed the True Parents in the U.S. Congress. And the U.S. Congress decided to make it a special day, a decision that was made and signed by 219 people including senators. That was a global event. People had thought that the Unification Church did not amount to much, but the day the wife of Reverend Moon went to the U.S. Congress and proclaimed the True Parents was determined by Congress to be a special day. If the president also signs it, the day will be instituted as a red-letter day. And when that happens, even the American embassies will observe that day as a national holiday. In short, the entire nation of America welcomed Mother with open arms. (259-141, 1994.04.02)

When Mother hosted the "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age" proclamation assembly in Japan, I included in her script tasks that Japan must carry out. Though scholars, religious believers or prophets cannot make a detailed proposal of what Japan should do in the future, I revealed everything in detail. Japanese leaders who had been opposing the Unification Church for no reason read that script and said, "Oh! I did not know the Bible. I did not know what God's Will is, or what the mainstream of that Will is." True leaders can realize such things instantaneously. They then became penitent. The script delivered in Japan is the historical conclusion of the future of Japan, and I have taught it to them most clearly. (248-201, 1993.09.30)

What would have happened if, 40 years ago, the Christians and foreign missionaries in Korea had not opposed Reverend Moon and the Ewha Womans University incident had not taken place? The students of Yonsei University and Ewha Womens University are a second-generation Adam and Eve. If True Parents could gain influence over the younger generation of students, from middle and high schools to university, the first generation would not be necessary. Therefore, Mother gave speeches on college campuses and in the National Assembly building of Korea in October 1993, in order to connect the second generation to her. (259-247, 1994.04.10)

Mother will tour 40 countries to deliver the proclamation of "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age." From the secular viewpoint, one may ask why she is going to the trouble of visiting other countries, but she is going there to plant seeds of love. Being a parent, she must travel difficult paths, climbing over mountains and crossing oceans, to plant seeds of love in order to save her children. She must educate them all equally. Only then can heavenly fortune be with her. She is delivering the speech in the United Nations, Japan, and even Korea. Since she is giving the same address in every part of the world, heavenly fortune will come to her. She must thus travel to all 40 nations. (251-315, 1993.11.01)

In November and December of 1993, Mother toured forty nations and proclaimed, "I am the True Mother!" I was able to make the announcement that I am the True Father only after undergoing death-defying ordeals throughout my life, but Mother has completely inherited all of my work in one-and-a-half years. Why did she have to do so? Because the one who can become God's object partner must appear on this earth. The object partner, the person of whom God can claim, "She is my wife! I am her husband!" must come forth. (259-226, 1994.04.10)

Korea is the central nation of the world. When all children can return to the Mother's womb and unite in joy and then become one with the Father, Satan will have no ground to stand upon. We need to create such a foundation and plant it worldwide. We need to plant it in 40 nations. That was the gist of Mother's 40-nation world speaking tour of 1993. At that time she was welcomed in every nation she visited. (257-194, 1994.03.15)

The question of who will lead the young people in the future is a global one. The first generation of Israelites wandered in the wilderness for 40 years and died there. The world has now reached an era similar to the time when the second generation of Israelites entered Canaan and found what they had hoped for. The surviving second generation had to construct a nation and a world with a philosophy of nation-building and world peace and accomplish what the first generation of the Israelite tribes could not. The Unification Church must restore this through indemnity. All these issues depend on women. They depend on mothers, who play an important role. (259-287, 1994.04.17)

From now on, mothers have to properly educate their children. The Israelite mothers and their sons and daughters who entered the land of Canaan were influenced by the people already there. Unable to preserve their own religious traditions, they failed to establish the kingdom in Israel. In order to restore this through indemnity, mothers have to imbue the traditional ideas of our church into our own second generation so that they will establish Heaven on Earth instead of being influenced by Satan's world. This will reverse the failures of the past. After mothers and their children become one, how do they establish the Kingdom in Israel? That is their mission. The Israelite mothers failed to think about this. They, together with their sons and daughters, followed in the footsteps of the seven tribes of Canaan. That was their grave mistake. We must go the opposite way. Mothers, sons, and daughters must unite in establishing the Heavenly Kingdom. Mothers have to educate their children so that they can have an influence on their university communities. Hence, after women of the world become second selves of True Mother, they must turn their children around 180 degrees, even if they have to hold onto them and not let them go.

To achieve that, you have to do the same as True Mother, who went on a speaking tour of 256 venues over the two years following 1992. You have to save your relatives and your nation. This is not some vague notion but a real problem. What is real is that I fought for 40 years, searching for a heavenly nation. I gave speeches in the United States in order to pass the baton to Mother, who went on to influence the university communities. Mothers have to rescue the second generation, their offspring. (259-327, 1994.04.24)

Centering on Mother, CARP is in the position of Abel and the political activists on university campuses are in the position of Cain. Mother must manage the dispute between Cain and Abel. The right-wing and left-wing activists of South Korea have to unite and stand in the Abel position and then unite with North Korean students, who are in Cain's position. Then all will end well. It does not matter how much people in positions of authority oppose this. On the day when the young people unite with Mother, the fortune of unification will visit this land. We have no choice but to do this, as herein lies the fortune of heaven. Now is the time to light an unquenchable fire in their young, glowing hearts. (267-239, 1995.01.08)

Mother delivered speeches to the U.S. Congress and the United Nations General Assembly and received resounding ovations. The U.N. is the congress of the free world. She also achieved great victories in the Eve nation, Japan. On Korean university campuses, political activist groups had kicked out CARP, but Mother turned the situation around all over the country. This was the restoration of the elder son's birthright. Although previously Christians had united with campus activists to defeat the Unification Church, the situation has now been reversed. The right has become the left, and the left has become the right. By siding with the Unification Church, former communist powers are coming to the heavenly side. The first shall be last, and the last shall be first. (274-291, 1995.11.03)

Mother shouldered a great responsibility when she had to stand on the front line for three years, from 1992 until 1995. The number 3 is a number of separation from Satan. That was the separation period, starting in America and progressing to the United Nations, to Japan, and to the world. She went on a speaking tour of 40 universities throughout Korea, connecting them to 40 nations in the world. They represented Cain and Abel centering on Parents. Finally, on the world level Mother stood in a position equal with me. I had passed on all my victories to Mother. At the end of World War II the world did not welcome me but chased me out, but now in the second course for the dispensation of restoration, the True Family was welcomed worldwide. This restored through indemnity the earlier failure to welcome me. (275-278, 1996.01.01)

From now on, you have to focus on witnessing to your family and relatives, middle and high school students, and college students. Now is the age of the second generation. The Israelites turned a deaf ear to Moses. Before arriving in Canaan, Moses and all of the first generation perished. However, I have arrived together with the second generation. This land belongs to the second generation, so I feel responsible for them. Mother and the sons and daughters of True Parents' family are conducting a speaking tour not only of 100 universities in the United States but also of 3,300 universities throughout the world. Starting in Japan, I must bring together all the world's students. It is my responsibility to win the hearts of young people from age 16, when Adam and Eve fell, to 21 and, adding another three years, to 24. The time for this has come. (260-088, 1994.04.11)

During the speaking tour of 100 American universities, about 700 people came to the speech at Harvard. They consisted of world-famous theologians and numerous students, who were all deeply moved. Harvard University was begun to revive America through religion and to create a country that follows God's Will. It has a history of 400 years. It is a traditional university that has trained many talented young leaders for the construction of America. When they heard that Mother, who is also world-famous, was coming to the university, they gave special permission for her to use their historical church building, and the meeting was a great success. (255-152, 1994.03.10)

Mother is on a speaking tour of 100 major universities in America, including Yale, Princeton and Columbia. She delivered a speech at New York University. Igniting the American youth is the same as

setting a new fire in America itself. The window of hope has been opened for young people trapped in despair, and university campuses are all cheering loudly with joy, almost as if they are welcoming holy water flowing in through that window. They are saying that the window of hope for infinite development and growth has been opened. At New York University, Mother gave her speech in the law school's biggest lecture room. At Maryland University, which she had visited earlier, more than 1,000 students came to hear her speak. (256-047, 1994.03.12)

Princeton University in America is quite famous, and True Mother was invited to speak there. Princeton is the home of many Christian churches, which are the central pillars and the source of the spirit of the city. This was something that we could not even have dreamed of. It is a place where every denomination has a congregation. Mother made her way into that place. There are chaplains, six of them, in the university. It would not have been possible if even one of them had opposed it. She could speak there only if all of them welcomed her. The content of her speech included the Divine Principle and the gist of the Old and New Testaments of the Bible. They are fearful words, so fearful that those who hear them cannot even open their mouths. However, there was not one professor among them who criticized the content of her speech. (258-174, 1994.03.17)

The Unification Church stands in the position of Abel to other churches. Thus, Christianity cannot invade the victorious Unification Church, which has reclaimed the elder son's birthright. Their position is similar to that of Esau, who could not strike Jacob because he had wrestled with the angel at the Ford of Jabbok and subjugated him. Mother delivered a speech at the U.S. Congress and also reached out to embrace university communities in Korea. CARP had been forcefully expelled from some universities by student activists, but Mother turned this around and CARP was reinstated. She spoke at 40 universities at a time when the North-South relationship was sour; it was a case of Abel seeking Cain. With the end of opposition to CARP, things began to change on the campuses. Mother knew it was a very difficult task, but she urged CARP members on. On the basis of Cain uniting with Abel, South Korean students saw an opportunity to hold exchange programs with North Korean students. Beginning with the International Student Leaders' Seminar in Moscow, CARP sponsored Korean university student leaders' training seminars in Washington and a North-South Korean university students' seminar in Beijing. Empowered by the name of True Parents, CARP took the lead in guiding North Korean students, who were in the Cain position, as well as South Korean student activists. (270-206, 1995.06.01)

Mother conducted a speaking tour of 40 Korean university campuses to inspire college students. We must educate the political activists on university campuses. I intend to take them to Russia for 21-day workshops. We have many Unification Church members there. We will take them to Moscow for just three weeks of education and show them around, and then they will all go back home. If we gather students from North Korea, South Korea, Russia and China, we will be able to form a federation that can confront communist ideology in Asia. Communism is doomed to collapse anyway. It already has collapsed in Russia, and that is happening in China as well. We are going to teach them Unification Thought, which is a counterproposal to communism. We need to pave the way for North Korean students. This will be the quickest way. From a providential viewpoint, students from the Korean Peninsula represent Cain and Abel, and when they unite, their parents will unite as well. (248-229, 1993.10.01)

Mother's speeches at 40 Korean universities were meant to separate the student social activists from the Christians and persuade the activists to unite with us. From the perspective of providential history, this is required in the indemnity course. With Mother at the center, CARP students and student political activists must lay the foundation again on college campuses. If student social activists in South Korea are regarded as being in Abel's position, those in North Korea are in Cain's position. South Korean student political activists appear red externally, but are white internally. In contrast, North Korean students are totally red, inside and out. We are taking South Korean student political activists and North Korean students to Moscow and training them. Pro-North Korean and pro-South Korean students in Japan will also participate in the workshops. Students from the United States, China, and the former Soviet Union will band together with the South Korean students, and as a group they will assimilate the students from North Korea. We have done our best to inform the North about these workshops. In Moscow, we are organizing the Youth Federation for World Peace. An international youth movement that transcends ideologies is unfolding.

You should not rely on CARP alone to do it. As we do not have a foundation in society, you have to gather and unite college alumni. Alumni and current students have a Cain-Abel relationship. Things can progress rapidly only if you bind together several groups and set up an organization to undertake large-scale worldwide activity. This is why Mother, the Women's Federation for World Peace and the Students' Federation need to create unity. (252-283, 1994.01.01)

Tour to establish the Universal Peace Federation and other important tours

For twenty years, centered on the government and people of the United States, President George H.W. Bush and the Southern Baptist churches, the way has been opened to unite the Catholic Church and the Protestant churches of the United States. Also, through our newspapers we have opened the way to an

equalization of culture in North, South and Central America. Returning to Korea, True Mother held Leadership Conferences for the Practice of True Family Life to Advance World Peace in 18 cities, which opened the door to invite high-ranking officials to the Blessing. However, because there has been so much opposition to the Blessing in Korea over the past 40 years, the Unification Church in Korea has become rather stagnant. But the way it works with Heaven's blessing is that if you don't establish a record of your accomplishments, the blessings do not come. The situation was desperate, so I sent Mother on three speaking tours in Korea to create a revival so that Korea can take the lead in the family Blessing. On that foundation, we could proclaim the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. (287-127, 1997.09.01)

We handed out books at the True Family Movement Hoon Dok rallies. At the rally in Japan the audience read the words out loud from the book. The speech, read out loud both by the audience and by Mother on the podium, and also read silently in their heads, reverberated and became one. The atmosphere was quite serious. All the scholars and famous people of Japan are exclaiming, "Oh, my!" while changing their direction altogether. (291-059, 1998.03.05)

At the Hoon Dok rallies in Japan, Mother handed out books and everyone clamored to receive them. It was the same when Mother took pictures with them, with everyone vying with each other to have their picture taken with her. Japanese people read a lot of books. They have a high standard. After we hold the True Family Movement Hoon Dok rallies in the father and mother nations, Korea and Japan, and next in America, we will have entered the global era. (291-075, 1998.03.05)

The Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity Assembly will be held eight times in Korea, led by me, and eight times in Japan, led by Mother, and another eight times in America, making a total of 24. When the speech has been given 24 times, that will be the conclusion. Today's assembly will pave the way to the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity Assemblies in Korea, Japan and America. The people who attend the God's Day celebrations for 2002 must take over from there and hold the assemblies in all parts of the world. (362-208, 2001.12.13)

I am grateful for the successful conclusion of the Assemblies to Bring the Unity and Secure Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth into the Life of the World, which were held in 12 places in Japan. Tonight's Tokyo Assembly represented Japan. There is only one mother nation. Therefore, since Mother has spoken in 12 representative cities of Japan, we can reach the obvious conclusion that anyone who lives in accordance with her speech will enter God's Kingdom, the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in Heaven. In other words, if the 125 million people of Japan unite and follow that path, they will completely fulfill their responsibility as the mother nation, which is to give birth to and resurrect everything in heaven and on earth.

In particular, the fact that women leaders have been selected as Ambassadors for Peace at this time is truly historic. I believe it will be remembered more as an event of the spirit world than that of the physical world. If women can take the lead in making the resolution to establish the standard before the Fall and unite together in one color and dedicate all Japanese people to God's side, Japan will become the central nation of the world. I hope that you all will unite in heart and in body as you work zealously to achieve that goal and march toward that destination and thus become an exemplary nation in the world. Looking at your faces, I cannot but think that God will rejoice in you and bless you because you all look so handsome and beautiful, and I hope that you will march forward with the cheer "Mansei for Japan!"

Mother, I appreciate what you have done too. You have worked hard, but I too have slept little here in Kodiak, for I woke up at 1:00 o'clock in the morning and went out to the sea. After I had lived like that for a while, I realized that the world had changed. Since you have worked so hard, Mother, I hope that the next time I see you, you will have grown that much closer to Heaven's side. In the meanwhile, please receive the joyous hearts of the Kodiak members gathered here, who are laughing aloud now. Hurry back!

Though I did not go to Japan, I have spoken to Mother in Japan while I am here in Kodiak, so it is the same whether we are here or in Japan. With that in mind, I hope you will share this joy together with us. (391-239, 2002.08.29, Phone call with True Mother at the Victory Celebrations in Japan for the Tokyo Assembly to Bring the Unity and Secure Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth into the Life of the World)

The Women's Federation for World Peace was established in 1992, centering on True Mother, and the movement to liberate women was proclaimed. Now True Mother, who had always followed behind True Father, emerged to stand at the forefront for the first time. True Mother had to reach out to the United States, as the representatives of the realm of the bride in the free world, by speaking at the U.S. Congress, and then she had to reach out to the United Nations, representatives of the global realm of the bride, by speaking at the United Nations headquarters. The proposal that True Mother presented when she spoke at the U.S. Congress, for a national Parents Day, was adopted by the U.S. Congress. President Clinton had no choice but to acknowledge Mother's achievement. Therefore, while the worldwide realm of Christianity became the foundation for the Bride, True Mother recovered the lost Christian cultural

sphere. The next thing is to find the lost U.N. The U.N is the palace of the free world. We must recover the lost palace of the united free world. If 185 nations proclaim Parents Day, we will enter the age of God's united world, the age of God's sovereignty. That age is now here. Mother has started a world speaking tour so that, centering on President and Mrs. [George H.W.] Bush, we can engraft this victory to Japan. After that we must engraft it to Korea and to the entire world. (280-215, 1997.01.01)

Mother hosted assemblies in Central and South America as part of her work to establish the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU) in 185 nations of the world. This was also to connect sixteen nations centering on the thirty-three South American independence fighters in order to relieve the sorrow of Jesus, who was unable to move the nations. Because the founding spirit of the new Israel, which should have been established centering on the family and clan of John the Baptist, was lost and had to be recovered, Mother inherited everything and went on a tour through the 16 nations, with the 33 people as the nucleus of the FFWPU movement, where even the parliamentarians were mobilized. Thus, the movement can pass through America, Korea and Japan and be connected to the rest of the world. (280-219, 1997.01.01)

Now Mother has completed more world tours than I have. Based on the official speech that represents the substantial body of Father and representing all women in the world, True Mother, indemnifying the failure of fallen Eve, must, on that foundation, conclude the fulfillment of her responsibility. I discovered the truth and defeated Satan from the husband's position, laying the foundation for success on the world level. Mother had to tour 120 nations and 180 cities, as if going through the pain of giving birth. Doing that work, during which she shed blood and sweat, she was in labor to give birth. After that comes the work by which Father's substantial victory is inherited and Eve's responsibility is completed. In the Garden of Eden, Eve could not love and attend her husband. Therefore, carrying the name of the Mother that all the world is able to recognize,

Mother had to travel around the world and then return to her family and take her position. This is the time we are entering. For the first time ever, a family has been established based on a God-centered husband and wife. All women must now become the second selves of Mother and give birth to humanity. Mother cannot do this alone. (582-173, 2007.12.08)

All members of the Unification Church worldwide are returning to their hometown after receiving the Blessing. The world is now in the Age of the Return to the Original Fatherland and Hometown. What you consider at present to be your fatherland is, in fact, not your real fatherland. That fatherland is Korea. That is where you find the blessed soil of your original hometown. Therefore, a great migration must take place. After that, you must register in your original hometown. Through this registration, you will become the ancestors of the heavenly nation. If you cannot register, you will feel deep regret. If you wait to register, problems will arise. It is not enough just to be here together today; if you do not register, you will create a separation that could last hundreds or thousands of generations. (526-195, 2006.05.17)

What is the meaning of the Universal Peace Federation gatherings for the Return to the Original Fatherland and Hometown? UPF is the Abel United Nations, but have you ascended to the same level as the Abel United Nations? If you rise to that position, you must not keep anything and claim that it belongs to you. You have to embody the restored substance of absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. Only when you attain the level of embodying these qualities, which God Himself applied during the time of creation, can God's love dwell within you. The question is whether you have achieved such a level. (526-077, 2006.05.12)

On June 2, 2006, Mother met the president of India. I heard that he said, "Reverend Moon's family ideal is wonderful." Ordinary people cannot think of gathering together families in order to form a single lineage. In doing this, I moved history forward. Leaders in the highest position understand these types of things immediately. They understand the reason I do this. True Parents, who have received so much persecution throughout their lives, have transcended the boundaries of nation and religion and given the marriage Blessing publicly. Family problems and the problems of young people, which are becoming more severe throughout the world, can be solved only by True Parents' special authority. (528-164, 2006.06.04)

There was a great commotion among the members of the Unification Church in America regarding the lecture Mother gave in Jerusalem on June 29, 2006. They said, "How can we hold an event in a war zone?" However, this was not their decision to make. Was it sufficient that they just voiced their concerns about safety without thinking about going there themselves to shield Mother? When the leader in charge of the event called me to ask, "How should I deal with this?" I asked him, "What are you worrying about? Is whether you live or die your main concern? When you find yourself on the path of death, you have to complete that course! You have to take responsibility for the problems that you encounter." When someone stands in a central position at any time in history, that person has to maintain that central position, fulfilling his responsibility. (531-094, 2006.06.30)

Only a few more African nations remain, and then Mother's world tour will conclude. We resurrected

people in many parts of the world this time by holding life-giving Blessing events. None of that will disappear. Now every day the Blessing will gradually expand. It will grow every year until it covers the entire world. Mother's beautiful presence, her beautiful voice, and the quality of Heaven's grace have the power to re-create. Therefore, when Mother sees prominent people attending her world tour, she joyfully steps forward with a heart that says, "Please become thoroughly immersed in the grace of Heaven, and become the ancestors and nations who will receive the respect of your descendants." (533-155, 2006.07.23)

People are more valuable than money, knowledge or power. Accordingly, without Mother I am miserable. Mother has concluded the events in Africa and is now halfway to Uruguay. It takes 16 hours to reach Uruguay. Without Mother it seems as if I have no ground to stand on. However much one may mention the good things in the world, I cannot appreciate them. A man needs a woman and a woman needs a man as a companion to share that joy. The principles of heaven and earth require that there be companions who harmonize and go through life's challenges together. (533-217, 2006.07.27)

What is it that True Parents should accomplish in 2007, a jubilee year of the providence? I came to earth representing the incorporeal God. I discovered and revealed all the secrets of heaven, earth and human beings and brought victory by paying indemnity. Then I passed on my entire victorious foundation to Mother. On this foundation Mother held a global speaking tour of 180 nations. Afterward, on the basis of unity between Cain and Abel, she toured 40 nations. The oneness of the family during these tours was the foundation for the work I did to deal with the providence. All of your families must follow that path. Consider that God is the first generation, Adam was the second generation, and Cain and Abel in Adam's family were the third generation. Didn't God lose the realm of three generations? So I had to win a victory that included the third generation, Cain and Abel, which I did. Mother also triumphed in this, thus bringing victory for Eve's realm. Accordingly, both True Parents, Father and Mother, are victorious. (569-071, 2007.07.22)

We toured the world until the very end, centering on God, True Father, True Mother, and Cain and Abel. True Parents toured 180 nations to indemnify all historical conflicts between mind and body, man and woman, husband and wife, parents and children, and between tribes. Those 180 nations cannot become nations like Israel all at once. For the first time, three generations, including my grandchildren, toured 40 nations. If the First Israel had united 40 nations, Jesus would not have died. Even if only 12 nations had become one with Israel, he would not have died. Because they could not do this, Jesus was trapped and even the people of Israel were trapped. The First Israel made a mistake, but all of that is being forgiven. Accordingly, three generations were mobilized and toured 40 nations. If we mobilize more than two generations, the world cannot oppose us. So three generations made the tour, and everyone without exception, from everyday workers and farmers to presidents, welcomed them. (575-218, 2007.09.23)

When we draw an axis through the globe from Korea, we find that Uruguay lies directly opposite. That is why True Parents, starting many decades ago, made all the necessary preparations in Uruguay, such as building a hotel. When Mother went to Uruguay as a part of her world speaking tour, the Uruguayan government opened the national congress building to her and they moved in concert with Mother through the first lady. God worked behind the scenes there, and the event was a great success. It was not a random event. (549-015, 2006.12.19)

Which is more important, the Word or the substance of the Word? Religions today are not sure of the substance and thus place more importance on the Word. Therefore, it is difficult for them to bring the Word and the substance into unity. In the Unification Church, however, we do not put the Word before the substance. Since we have the substance, the embodiment of God, the actions of the substance are testified to by the Word. We have the content that unites the internal and the external. The assemblies at which God's embodiments proclaim the Word have begun. They are to lead those in religious and academic circles to the solutions to the main issues they encounter in their search for the truth. (2010.07.08, Cheon Jeong Gung)

We, the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, have now settled. Since we are the substance of the Word, we need to proclaim the Word. The Word spoken by the substance of Truth, that is, by the settled substantial beings of Truth, can liberate the universe. This is the meaning of the proclamation that True Parents are the substance of the Word. The settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind signifies the settlement of the substance of the Word. That is why what we are proclaiming is that we are the substantial Word. (2011.11.27, Cheon Jeong Gung)

The things that True Parents pray and wish for do not just fall into our laps. Heavenly Parent watches over us from a position of liberation, and no one can stand in His way. Therefore, our prayers and wishes will be fulfilled in due course. Understanding this, I hope that you will not become a pitiable group of people who are hesitant to follow the path of the Will. I am speaking these words as the person who has fulfilled the responsibility of the world-level Messiah and whose prayers and wishes extend far beyond the tribal level. These words are to proclaim the glory of the world prior to the Fall, when the first human beings did not have their own self-centered views but lived in freedom in heaven and on earth where God was

liberated, victorious and supreme. The words that I am proclaiming now represent the fruits of my entire life. They bring everything to a conclusion, from the first to the last. Such is the meaning of the Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God's Embodiment, Proclaim the Word. (2011.02.03, Cheon Jeong Gung)

Humanity will give glorious reports in the united realm of heaven and earth, and work and live together and become the citizens of Cheon Il Guk. Aju. Since we can advance to the position where we can complete the original, symbolic title of the Garden of Eden, we will create the great utopian world of eternal jubilation in the united realm where everything has been perfected, completed and concluded through our participation, in all of heaven and earth. We will build the glorious Kingdom of Heaven where we will attend the God of the new heaven and earth and new freedom during our lifetime, and where the created world that is the object partner of the fatherland of the universe for all eternity will praise Adam and Eve. Therefore, we pray that You can settle down and enjoy the happiness of true love in us as individuals and in our families, tribes, peoples, nations, world and the cosmos. Aju. May it continue to exist as the eternal kingdom in its own right. Aju. Through registration, Japan and all humanity will come to an eternal settlement in the family of True Parents where night and day are united and will build and march forward into the ideal Kingdom of Heaven of liberation where they can attend the great True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. The true questions and true answers for the perfection of the Kingdom of Heaven will be given through the Cosmic Assemblies for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God's Embodiment, Proclaim the Word. Moreover, we will follow with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience the declarations of Cheon Jeong Gung and Las Vegas, made in accordance with the Will that is the nucleus of true freedom, peace and happiness and the pillar of the cosmos, and we thus will be united in oneness. (2011.04.24, Songdo Convensia, Incheon)

Chapter 4: The Mission of Japan, the Mother Nation, and the Suffering of the Missionaries

Japan, the Eve nation

If I had not established Japan as the Eve nation, it would not have grown and developed as it has. Instead, it would have become a wretched nation. If the Christian culture had accepted me, Britain would have been the Eve nation. The Adam nation is Korea. With France as the archangel nation, they all should have united automatically, but they instead acted against God and opposed Him. That is why the Adam nation, the Eve nation and the archangel nation had to be established centering on the Unification Church, a fact that never should be forgotten. Therefore, the blessing Japan received was not for its own sake. It was for the sake of the world, the Unification Church, and Korea. (186-116, 1989.01.29)

Japan will be placed at the forefront as a representative of Asia. In addition, since Japan is the Eve nation and as such should carry out its mission as the mother for the people of the world, it has the responsibility to feed them with its own flesh and blood, if need be. The world can grow and develop only through the helping hand of the mother. Therefore, it is my plan to establish such a tradition by placing Japan at the forefront as the representative of Asians. (055-345, 1972.05.09)

Japan has a mission as the Eve nation. Japan's wealth does not exist for its own people. Japan has the name of the Eve nation because it must restore the substantial realm of Jesus in Asia centering on the Adam nation. The Eve nation must restore Jesus' body. (249-137, 1993.10.08)

After Korean women have restored the position of the elder sister, Japanese women take the position of the younger sister. Therefore, centering on True Mother, who has the worldwide heavenly fortune in the age of restoration in the realm of Eve, Korea has to save Japan, the younger sister. In other words, Mother has to restore Japan, which stands in the position of the second daughter, and then restore Korea in the position of the elder daughter. Mother can restore Japan as the younger daughter and thereby represent the position of the Eve nation. Then, through bringing Japan to unite with Korea in the position of the elder daughter, Mother can lead both the elder daughter and younger daughter to the bosom of God. The time for this has come. Japanese members and Korean members can become like natural brothers and sisters, but they have to love each other above all. A divided people have met after 6,000 years, so Mother has to love the Japanese more than the Koreans. (232-032, 1992.07.01)

When we make sisterhood relationships between Korean and Japanese women, one is Leah and the other Rachel. Which is Leah and which is Rachel? The one born first is the older sister, and since Japan was the first to establish the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia, it took the position of Leah, the older sister. Korea was in the position of Rachel, the younger sister. Therefore, Korean women need to restore the authority of the elder daughter. Leah and Rachel fought in Jacob's family, but now you must not fight. Leah has to put Rachel in front and unite with her, saying, "I understand your position well. I entrust everything to you. No matter what, I will attend you." The unity of heaven and earth starts with women, from the viewpoint of mother-son cooperation. This is a formula of the Principle. (224-193, 1991.11.24) Korean women connected to True Mother are in the position of the elder sister, and the Japanese women

are in the position of the younger sister. In the course of restoration, the younger sibling stood on God's side, but in the completion age, it is the elder sibling who stands in front of God. When Mother declared the liberation of women worldwide, she first became connected to the world of women in Korea. The elder sister must receive the Blessing first and become connected to Mother, and then unite as one with the younger sister. By doing so, the original position of Eve is created. After that, the Adam nation and women must become one and must save Cain and Abel in the archangelic world. How are they to be connected to their lost children? The Cain and Abel nations can be restored by the nation chosen to assume the position of the perfected bride with the status of the mother. The Cain nation consists of the combined nations of Europe, and the Abel nation is America. By connecting the Korean and Japanese women centering on True Parents, the Cain European women and the Abel American women in the archangelic world can be saved. (244-213, 1993.02.07)

From Eve nation to mother nation

The Eve nation is the fruit of Tamar. It is Tamar's fruit as well as Mary's. That is why the nation of Japan must deny its own sons and daughters, its father and its husband, just as Tamar and Mary did, for otherwise it cannot enter the kingdom of God. The Eve nation shoulders overall responsibility. In the end, for the mother to become the mother on the world level, on behalf of all people in the world she must shoulder the responsibilities of Tamar of the formation stage, Mary of the growth stage and True Mother of the completion stage. She must deny Satan centering on all her sons and daughters worldwide, and also on God. For this reason, Eve must not try to assume the position of mother's nation bearing her past history like a badge of honor, by which she can try to raise her own prestige and reputation. This itself would be contradictory to the providential viewpoint. Instead, she must deny it and embrace everything. The mother has the responsibility to embrace all lost things, the lost son and the lost God, and to return with them. (313-014, 1999.11.09)

Japan, the Eve nation, is the global embodiment of Tamar and Mary. By global embodiment, I mean that as a nation Japan stands in the position of Mary and Tamar. Tamar represents the position to liberate the people. Mary represents the position to liberate the nation. The mother stands in the position to liberate the cosmos. Because you, Japanese people, have this responsibility, you must deny all the things that belong to Satan, including the secular world that stands in the position of the elder son on Satan's side. Japan must embrace the religious groups on God's side. In order to follow God, you must completely sever from Satan's realm, turn around 180 degrees and go in the opposite direction. Otherwise, you cannot fulfill your responsibility as the people of the Eve nation, the mother nation. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. This is the conclusion of the dispensation of salvation. You have to go beyond the realm of Tamar's mission on the level of the people, and beyond the realm of Mary's mission on the level of the nation, in order to fulfill your mission as the mother nation. Otherwise, Japan cannot take the position of the mother nation. (313-015, 1999.11.09)

Japan will now become the embodiment of True Mother. It must work for all the people in the world, its brothers and sisters who are starving to death. I directed that you should love Cain more than your own sons and daughters. Abel must stand in Cain's position and Cain in Abel's position, and they must receive the Blessing together. At this point in time, when the moment for the movement to overturn the world is fast approaching, through which the elder brother will come to stand in the position of the younger brother and the younger brother in the position of the elder brother, Japan overturning itself as Eve is not a problem. It is the mission of Japan, the Eve nation, to accept such a thing as a matter of course. Japan is no longer the Eve nation. It has been appointed as the mother nation. In short, it is the mother. Children are the "incarnations" of the mother, in that they have been formed by a part of the mother's own body. Their own bones, flesh and blood are all extensions of their mother. Therefore, it would not be a problem for children to unite as one with their mother. (295-215, 1998.08.28)

Global mission and the suffering of missionaries

In December of 1980, one of our missionaries became a sacrifice in Africa. When I heard that report, I said, "You have walked your course. You will become the ancestor of the Unification Church in that country." I believe that if you die for the sake of the world in a position similar to mine, you will become the world's ancestor. I also am walking that path. Even if we are inclined not to pay attention to this solitary missionary, the truth is that he lived a public life of service greater than that of anyone else. (111-019, 1981.01.11)

One of our missionaries was executed. Our missionaries went through many hardships because they did not have a solid foundation to stand on. In some countries, communist forces have executed people who were following True Parents, because in their eyes those people posed a serious problem. When they were about to execute a Czech woman missionary, they asked, "What is your last wish?" Our missionary's last words were, "I lack nothing. If I can die after offering a full bow toward the place where True Parents are, I have no regrets."

One of our missionaries was shot and killed by the police in Africa. He was Japanese. He yearned to see

love prevail and was intent on seeing God's kingdom of love. He therefore went beyond national borders, even walking the path of death in a lonely place. Yet he did not fear death. His heart was, "Even though I may die alone in Africa, far away from my parents, relatives and homeland, I have no sorrow. I am a victor. Why would I be afraid of death when I have revealed the way of Heaven, which is the way of love?" How historic this man is! He could do that because he had discovered the path of love through True Parents. The education provided on the path of love is genuine. A promise made in a position of love will not be forgotten even after tens of thousands of years. Recognizing that we have a spirit body and a physical body, the process whereby you connect through a heart of love brings the cells of your spirit body and physical body to resonate with one another. Consequently, promises made between loved ones rooted in love will never be forgotten. (139-055, 1986.01.26)

You have to understand that our brothers and sisters are working underground, putting their lives on the line and fighting behind the Iron Curtain in communist countries. One person sent me his dying words, which read, "Teacher, the end is coming. I will see you in spirit world." This is the battle we are fighting. Who will defend the world against communism? There is nobody but us. (087-025, 1976.04.23)

There are several of our missionaries who were executed for working as pioneers in the Soviet Union and its satellite states. They died for the Will. And there are a good many people who were released after being tortured and imprisoned for four, up to even seven, years. I have received such reports. To whom can I speak about such things? People whose faces I do not even know well walk the path of death while looking toward Korea, a small country in Asia from afar and praying, "Teacher, goodbye. I have to leave before you." How can I, who know about this path being trodden by our missionaries, sleep in comfort with my arms and legs spread out wide? I still can't, even now. Because it has become a habit with me, I cannot fall asleep when I am lying on my back. Instead, I lie on my side and sleep curled up. I do that so I will not be indebted to them. (212-267, 1991.01.06)

I will not be indebted to you. Though you went out as missionaries with a pioneering spirit and had to weep and suffer, I do not owe anything to you, because I have always fulfilled my duties as the father. If a mother and father have sent their child out to the sea and there is a storm raging, do you think they will be able to sleep as they listen to the sounds of the storm? I have sent my children out to the front line across the world, my sons and daughters who are praying for their parents to receive blessings and enjoy longevity even as we speak. With this kind of concerned heart, how could I possibly fall asleep without first making a report about them to Heaven? (181-272, 1988.10.03)

As a person with the title "True Parent;" I live in such a way that I do not owe anyone anything. Be it night or day, I live my life transcending time. If members around the world are working hard without much food, and praying for my health, can I sit down and eat in comfort? You should think about your parents, who are still in the position of sinners. That is a noble ideology. Upholding such an ideology, you should work hard and invest yourself for your clan, and then forget having done so. Then you will definitely become the central figure, and as a central figure, you must shoulder responsibility. (227-290, 1992.02.14)

Part 5: The Proclamation of True Parents and the Chung Pyung Providence

Outline of True Mother's Life 5: The Proclamation of True Parents and the Chung Pyung Providence

"The Reverend Sun Myung Moon, founder of the Unification Church, and I, his wife, have shouldered all conditions of accusation coming from Satan's side and followed a global path of indemnity and suffering, in unity with God, from the position of True Parents, so as to bring liberation to all of God's children."

True Mother proclaimed the advent of True Parents in front of the world during her speech at the inaugural rally of the Women's Federation for World Peace on April 10, 1992. In order to restore the foundation lost after the United States failed to fulfill its responsibility centered on Christianity, True Parents had to go through a 21-year course of re-indemnity. True Father was able to finally establish a worldwide victorious tradition and True Mother was able to become victorious as a historic representative of women. On this foundation, they were able to proclaim that they are the True Parents of humanity.

On August 24, 1992, at the congratulatory banquet of the 1st World Culture and Sports Festival, which was attended by present and former heads of state and leaders from all walks of life, True Father revealed the following: "In early July, I spoke at rallies held by the Women's Federation for World Peace in five cities around Korea. There, I declared that my wife, WFWP President Hak Ja Han Moon, and I are the True Parents of all humanity. I declared that we are the Savior, the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah," proclaiming True Parents on a global level.

The proclamation of the True Parents

On the foundation of having proclaimed the advent of the True Parents, the returning Lords, True Father

proclaimed the completion of the New Testament Age and the beginning of the Completed Testament Age, on January 3, 1993. From May, True Father and True Mother set off on a speaking tour under the title, "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age" in 115 cities in 43 nations. Having proclaimed that True Father and True Mother are the True Parents of humanity both in name and reality, they then declared the coming of the Completed Testament Age -- a new age surpassing the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age -- in front of the entire world.

A major example of True Parents' efforts for world peace and unification was their visit to North Korea to meet with President Kim Il-sung on November 30, 1991, at the official invitation of the North Korean government, which sent them a special charter flight on Air Koryo to bring them to the North. On December 1, 1991, speaking before the Supreme People's Assembly at the Mansudae Assembly Hall, True Father emphasized, "The *juche* ideology cannot become the unifying ideology of North Korea and South Korea. Only Godism, or head-wing thought can bring about a unified homeland." He underlined the essence of Godism, saying that only true love can achieve unification between the two Koreas and the unification of the world.

After signing a joint statement and an agreement on economic cooperation on December 5, True Parents visited Jeong-ju, True Father's birthplace and hometown. On December 6, the seventh day of their visit, they had a historic meeting with Kim Il-sung at his official residence in Ma-jeon, Heung-nam, South Hamg-yeong Province. Groundbreaking changes between the two Koreas followed their meeting, among which are the signing of the "Inter-Korean Agreement for Reconciliation, Non-Aggression and Cooperative Exchange," the "Joint Declaration on the Denuclearization of the Korean peninsula" and meetings for family members who had been separated by the division of the Koreas.

True Father revealed that his meeting with President Kim Il-sung was not one between Esau and Jacob, but one between the false parents and the True Parents. By bringing Kim Il-sung, the false parent, into voluntary submission, True Parents were able to indemnify and restore the victorious realm of the parents, and on this foundation, they could proclaim the advent of the True Parents.

The opening of the era of women, centered on True Mother, led to the fruition and victory of the Completed Testament providence. On March 21, 1999, the 360 Million Couples Blessing took place and Lucifer, the archangel, surrendered. On the foundation of having successfully conducted revivals to advance the global expansion of true families in 80 cities, True Parents made the Congratulatory Declaration of the East-West (Global) Victory of True Parents on May 30. On June 14, at the Proclamation Rally Congratulating True Parents' Cosmic Victory, True Father presented True Mother with a plaque of recognition, praising her victorious course as the Mother of humanity through fulfilling her mission as a child in front of Heaven, her mission as a wife in front of her husband, and her mission as a true parent in front of her children.

The Chung Pyung providence

True Parents offered prayers and devotion for many years in the area around Chung Pyung Lake in Gapyeong County, Gyeong-gi Province starting in the 1960s, to establish an ideal community as a model for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, where people from around the world can live together transcending race, culture, religion and nationality. They invested in the area spiritually and externally, purchasing land for spiritual training facilities, living in a tent to pray for the area and going fishing in order to connect to God's heart, in order to build up a strong foundation for a spiritual community in the Chung Pyung area.

On July 12, 1971, True Parents established the Chung Pyung training center within the Song-san-ri area of Seorak township in Gapyeong County, Gyeong-gi Province. On November 7, 1999, construction of the Chung Pyung Heaven and Earth Training Center as an international facility for the spiritual training of members from all across the globe was completed and the training center was formally dedicated to Heaven. After the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and the Coronation of True Parents as the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth, which took place on June 13, 2006, True Father and True Mother became owners among owners and the king and queen among kings and queens with the authority to govern everything under God's sovereignty. They opened a new age by dedicating the original palace of the ideal realm of the Kingdom of Heaven, where all people can co-exist eternally in mutual prosperity.

Working upon the foundation of their cosmic victorious realm, in 1995 True Parents began works of spiritual cleansing and liberation at Chung Pyung, centered on Heung Jin nim and Dae-mo nim, to help members to separate from evil and dark spirits from the fallen world who had become attached to them. This work was expanded to include ancestral liberation ceremonies in 1999, beginning with the liberation of ancestors in a person's direct line from the 1st through the 7th generations. True Parents said that even if ancestors are in hell, they can now receive the benefit of the Blessing that comes with this age thanks to True Parents' special authority. Once ancestors go through the liberation and Blessing ceremonies, they will return to earth, and by cooperating with their descendants, they can go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

In order to liberate the spirit world, True Father conducted spirit world Blessings on several occasions

beginning from the 360,000 Couples Blessing Ceremony on August 25, 1995. Early in the morning on the day before the 360,000 Couples Blessing ceremony, True Parents blessed Chung-bu nim and Chung-mo nim, Daeh-yeong nim and Dae-mo nim. Then on December 1 of that year, True Parents proclaimed the Proclamation of the Opening of the Spiritual World Blessing Ceremony. On June 13, 1998, during the 360 Million Couples Blessing Ceremony, True Parents also blessed both saints and evil people in the residing in the spirit world. As the spirit world Blessing continued to unfold, True Parents were able to liberate hell in the spirit world, and a way was opened for all spirits to go to heaven.

In 2016, on the 27th day of the 5th month by the heavenly calendar (July 1, solar), True Mother gave the name Hyo Jeong Cheon Won Complex to the area and facilities surrounding Cheon Jeong Gung and the Chung Pyung training center, which had formerly been called Cheonwon Complex. She explained that the HyoJeong (or HJ) CheonWon Complex is the heavenly Garden of Eden that God has longed to see, and she announced her plans for developing the area.

The first stage of the Hyojeong Cheonwon Chung Pyung providence began in 1971 with the establishment of the Chung Pyung training center original holy ground. The Chung Pyung providence entered its second stage in 1995 when the spiritual works of Heung Jin nim and Hong Sun-ae Dae-mo nim began and moved on to its third stage in 2014 when the era of True Parents' direct governance of the spiritual world and physical world began. From this point on, True Parents opened the era of their direct governance over the physical and spiritual world and have ever since led the Chung Pyung providence.

Chapter 1: The Proclamation of the Messiah, Lord of the Second Advent, Savior and True Parents, and the Dawn of the Completed Testament Age

The proclamation of the Messiah, Savior and True Parents, and its significance

We may all find ourselves on a common path of destruction unless we are able to resolve the crises we face through a love that transcends national boundaries and ethnic differences and encompasses all the world's peoples. Let me emphasize again: Any successful resolution of this crisis will be based on an effort to build a unified world through a movement of true love such as that rooted in the Unification Principle, or Godism. In early July this year, I spoke in five cities in Korea at rallies held by the Women's Federation for World Peace. There, I declared that my wife, WFWP President Hak Ja Han Moon, and I are the True Parents of all humankind who are together the Savior, the Lord of the Second Advent, and the Messiah.

Why would I stand before women leaders of Korea and make such an astonishing and fearful announcement? The reason is that God has been carrying out the providence to send the returning Messiah, the second perfected Adam. He subjugates Satan in order to establish a perfected Eve who will represent all women. God must do this, because it was when Satan caused Eve to fall that the origin of human history came to be permeated with sin.

Women are the center of the love, peace and spirit of service that protects our families, and it is the healthy family that is the starting point in our work to build world peace. The establishment of God-centered family ethics and the education of our children lie at the innermost core of my teachings. The family is the holy sanctuary that cleanses this defiled world.

That is the reason it was necessary that I, as the Messiah, make my declaration to women leaders gathered around President Hak Ja Han Moon, my wife, who stands in the position of perfected Eve. This declaration is an exhortation and notification to all who follow my teachings to join Mrs. Moon and I in our attendance to God on the path of sacrifice and service for the salvation of the world.

What is the age of the liberation of women from the viewpoint of providential history? To find Eve, I need to fight on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, that is, heaven and earth, and I even need to fight against God. These are the eight stages. God is testing me. God says to me, "Whatever you may say to me, I don't care!" It is the same as when a fallen child comes back home and says, "Oh, Mother!" with repentance, and the mother pushes the child away with the words, "You rascal, I don't care about you!" There still remains such a hill to be surmounted. No matter how much God tries, He cannot deny this principle.

There was a time when Reverend Moon fought with all the spirits in the spirit world, saying, "There is no way for God to live without this principle." Therefore, chaos reigned in the spirit world for more than 40 days, and God had to step in and pass judgment. In the end He said, "Follow the words of Sun Myung Moon." Thereupon, a united realm was achieved. When he returned to the physical world, which was divided into left and right and front and back all fighting against one another, Reverend Moon was still able to proclaim to everyone that he is the Messiah and the True Parent, because he had received the seal of Heaven that marks him as the greatest leader of this world. (233-092, 1992.07.30)

The True Parents will not make their advent on the clouds from the sky. Instead, they will appear in this

age and on this earth as Koreans, and lead the world into an age of peace and unity. During my life of more than 70 years, I have received much persecution while I practiced my teachings all around the world. I have never been defeated, however. My wife, Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon, has walked this path of suffering together with me as the representative of all women in the world. During the time that I, in the course of following the path of righteousness in accordance with God's Will, received persecution by unrighteous forces in the form of imprisonment, she made a determination to gather together righteous women of good conscience to begin a movement for peace. Her efforts have borne fruit in this rally today. (229-080, 1992.04.10)

From now on, Eve should not be made to stand in the background. Instead, she should stand side by side with Adam. That is why I have Mother stand beside me. Men should stand behind me and women should stand behind Mother, and they should attend us. I hope you will remember that the place where we absolutely proclaimed the foundation upon which husband and wife can thus unite was the inaugural assembly of the Women's Federation for World Peace. That assembly was the assembly for the liberation of women. If Rebekah had understood, 2,000 years ago, all that I have worked out and taught about the providence today, women in the world would not have been persecuted so much. They have been persecuted because no one knew about it until now. No one knew about Mother until now, either. By prolonging the three stages of formation, growth and completion, I invested myself. Therefore, since the time has come for us to save the sons and daughters of the unfallen world of the perfected realm, we have clearly proclaimed, "True Father is Sun Myung Moon and True Mother is Hak Ja Han Moon." If we do not do that, we cannot receive the support of the spirit world. After we boldly proclaim such a thing to the world, there is not one person who can oppose us. This is due to True Parents' victory. (229-155, 1992.04.11)

Henceforth, no one will oppose us even if True Parents stand at the forefront. The time has come when we can naturally move on without facing opposition. Wherever we go in the world, we can give speeches in the name of True Parents. Even though True Mother officially announced in front of 150,000 women, "Reverend Moon is the True Father of Humankind and Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon is the True Mother of Humankind;" there was no one who opposed her. Instead, now people say, "We know that very well. How much persecution you have had to endure worldwide for the sake of humankind! Now we will follow you." If you follow True Mother and True Father, you will enter the kingdom of God. You will cross the threshold of the heavenly kingdom. (230-096, 1992.04.26)

The life course that my wife and I have followed for the last 32 years, upholding our heavenly calling based on God's Will, is a course that we can be proud of in front of all Korean people and all of humankind. The path we walked until now was a thorny path that you could not even imagine. To liberate all humanity from the realm of sin, and to build a foundation for the reunification of the divided Korean peninsula, we have continued to fight, shedding blood and sweat in such places as America, the Soviet Union, China and Japan. Now our foundation has been solidly laid, and the time has come for us to show ourselves to the people of Korea.

During the last 30 years, before we were able to lay this worldwide foundation, my wife and I were subjected to the misunderstanding and persecution of our own brethren, the people of Korea, which was truly unbearable and sorrowful. Not only did the government persecute the Unification Church and me through successive administrations, but some Christians also slandered us and schemed against us quite maliciously.

In spite of all such difficult and unfavorable conditions, my wife and I united completely through God's Will and true love and overcame all difficulties. Now, the number of people who attend my wife and me as True Parents is growing each day in more than 160 nations across the world.

My wife, Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon, never wavered once, and she fulfilled all her duties and missions, both as the wife of a husband who is walking the path of the cross and as the mother of 13 children, as we surmounted the adversities along our course.

In light of this, when I inaugurated the Women's Federation for World Peace in Seoul in the presence of 150,000 women from 72 nations, I nominated my wife as its first president, for she is the exemplary model for women, and can lead all women worldwide from the forefront and show them the path to follow. (231-007, 1992.05.11)

The first ancestors, Adam and Eve, failed to become the True Parents, who are the origin of true love, true life and true lineage, and fell instead. Thus, humankind, their descendants, came to live amid sin and struggle. Conflicts between individuals or nations and antagonism between religions and ideologies all arise from the Fall. God's providence of salvation is to find and establish the True Parents again and fulfill the good ideal of creation. As True Parents, my wife, Dr. Hak Ja Han Moon and I are carrying out a movement to save the world through true love in order to complete the providence, so that the harmony and unity of the purpose of creation can be realized. (267-260, 1995.01.02)

God has worked hard. He has undergone all kinds of hardships to raise the perfected Adam. Thus, True Father came into being. The true man of heaven was born. Satan's world knew that this man came as the true groom and owner, as well as the king of heaven and earth, the physical and spiritual worlds. Therefore, people worldwide, from individuals to families, nations, the world and the cosmos, all came together as representatives of the world to get rid of him.

While standing in the position where he was subjected to the kinds of persecution, schemes and slander that Satan perpetrated against God's representatives throughout history, True Father achieved global victories on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, and thus became one with God. Moreover, for the first time in world history, he emerged as the victor and recovered individuals, families, tribes, people, nations, the world and the cosmos from Satan's world.

True Mother, who had been in the position to stand behind True Father, was placed on an equal footing with him for the first time in history, and she proclaimed the liberation of women worldwide. This means that True Father and True Mother can enter into the presence of God, together with their children, and inherit His absolute authority and absolute power, and starting with the original family, restore the tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, thereby reorganizing the perfected world of God's Will. (234-264, 1992.08.26)

Everything was brought to a close in August of 1992 and the advent of True Parents was proclaimed, and thus True Parents were established and the age of True Parents was ushered in on earth. We are now entering the age where all that was lost by the nation of Israel and by Judaism, and all the responsibilities that America and Christianity failed to fulfill, can be revived and brought to settlement. (235-251, 1992.09.20)

True Parents and the beginning of the Completed Testament Age

If America unites with Heaven's providence and fortune, the entire world can be united. America must take responsibility. Korea represents the Old Testament Age and America the New Testament Age. The reason Jesus could not accomplish everything that had been prophesied in the Old Testament Age is because he was not able to take a wife and establish a family. These two nations must be united. First Korea and the Unification Church must unite from the positions of plus and minus. They are in the same position as Judaism and Israel at the time of Jesus. What was lost has to be restored again. Korea is in the position of Israel. Next it has to expand throughout the free world, including the Christian world. First, from the Old Testament point of view, one way or another the realm of True Parents has to be established. Therefore, the Holy Wedding was held in 1960. This Holy Wedding concluded the Old Testament Age. In 1971 we moved to America to try to unite the democratic world and the entire free world in order to reach the world level. True Parents' position has now been firmly established along with the liberation of women, so we are proclaiming True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. (247-109, 1993.04.25)

The Christian cultural realm could not stand as the bride, so Mother gathered together women from around the world and in 1992 declared and expanded a great movement in seven countries, even including Russia. It is the movement for women's liberation. Because Mother proclaimed liberation and announced True Parents and the Completed Testament Age, the world under Satan's dominion is ending. The Unification Church is the only entity that can save the family and save the nation. By means of forming anew the tradition of the family of True Parents as well as the true tribe, true people, true nation, true world and the true heaven and earth, the true heavenly nation is being realized. Things are developing according to this formula. (247-110, 1993.04.25)

From the point of view of restoration, from what point were the advent of True Parents and the Completed Testament Age announced? All people in the world are in Satan's realm, but we have finally ushered in the age where they are no longer separated from True Parents and are able to meet them and be with them. Therefore, when the liberation of women was proclaimed through the opening of the age of women on April 10, 1992, all women were given the right to become Mother's representatives centered upon her.

True Parents and the Completed Testament Age signify that Adam and Eve must return to the place where they can be perfected and unfallen. And all women in the world will be treated as Mother's representatives. Adam is one person, and so is Eve. This is important. There should be one perfected Adam and one Eve as well. Though True Parents finally came into existence in the course of the historical ages, from the horizontal viewpoint True Parents have to pass through the thousands of years from the time of Adam and Eve to resolve this matter. In other words, it must be resolved centering on the world-level woman and world-level man. (266-065, 1994.12.11)

The Unification Church's declaration of "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age" means we are at a turning point. Because we are going to create the ideal family and the ideal tribe, the Family Federation had to emerge. In the marriage Blessing of the Unification Church, the archangel at the completion level of the growth stage, namely the archangel on Heaven's side, marries. After receiving the

Blessing, if you go beyond the completion stage, you can enter the realm of the direct dominion as part of the family of Adam. Accordingly, starting in 1960, I passed from the completion level of the growth stage into the completion stage, and during that course I entered a time of worldwide persecution. I had to get beyond that period of persecution to achieve settlement. The settlement that should have happened in 1952 was delayed; the age of women, centering on True Mother and including the liberation of women, was announced in 1992, and True Parents were able to stand anew in the same position in front of Heaven. If we had not liberated women, we would not have been able to complete the liberated realm of Adam. All people are brothers and sisters until the lost standard of husband and wife in Adam's family centered on the love of Adam and Eve is achieved. We must go over and form anew the ideal family after fulfilling our position as the children of God.

That is why I have led the way until now. Mother followed behind me. If she had stood next to me, she would have been violated by Satan. This is Mother's second restoration of Eve's realm in the world of indemnity. Christian history is all about the restoration of the Bride's realm, so the Allied Nations are the world centered on the Christian cultural realm. Because the world of the Bride's realm opposed me, the 4,000-year history begun from Jacob's family needs to be indemnified once again in 400 years, but I cannot live for 400 years.

To restore it through indemnity within the one generation of 40 years, I need to restore through indemnity the history of 4,000 years in 40 years. That is why all historical ages of the world are attacking me in full force. Though I may not have bombs thrown at me, the condition has to be established that they have at least struck me with something, even if it is as big as a bean. That is the condition of indemnity. It is one-to-one indemnity. When I fight against everything that has taken place in the historical ages and win, the satanic world will have to retreat.

That is why I have to bear the cross of persecution endured by the Abel-type men in the course of the 4,000-year history, centered on God's history until the coming of the Messiah, as the representative of the 40-year history. Because I thus brought the Cain and Abel realms under control, Mother could appear. This means that it is now the age of Mother, the mother who can bring unity between Cain and Abel. (264-231, 1994.11.03)

Through the proclamation of women's liberation, True Parents were finally able to establish the connection of the parents from a liberated position on earth, centering on the Lord of the Second Advent, who is the perfected Adam. Thus, we have entered the era when God can personally govern the entire created world. We cannot realize a united world on earth today without uniting the spirit world as well. After the Second World War, the worldwide Christian cultural realm should have become one centering on the coming Groom. However, the Messiah has now restored the world-level standard through indemnity and announced, "True Parents and the Completed Testament Age," and the position where the united spirit world and the united physical world can come together as one has been established. The settlement of True Parents and the Completed Testament Age has finally taken place on this earth, and with the family as the center, the axis has been created by which the tribes, peoples, nations, world and cosmos, that is, all of heaven and earth, can be connected together. (261-109, 1994.06.09)

Chapter 2: Plaque of Commendation for True Parents' Cosmic Victory and Calligraphic Tribute to True Mother

Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory and the presentation of a plaque of commendation

True Father and True Mother were able to stand side by side as God's son and daughter after passing the eight stages extending from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos, and finally God's stage. They now stand in the same dimensional position. The Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory could be made on this foundation. Now, all of you need to completely inherit the model that True Parents have established. True Father and True Mother's mission is to restore the world tainted by Adam and Eve, the false parents. If you unite with True Parents with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, Satan will not be able to interfere. (310-292, 1999.07.27)

What is the meaning of the plaque of recognition I gave to Mother on June 14, 1999? Throughout history, the Eves of three ages sacrificed the Adams of those ages. But at this time Mother set the conditions to qualify as the Mother of three ages. She rose to the position where she could receive Heaven's blessing on an equal footing with Father. Without the completion of the four-position foundation and three object partners purpose, it is impossible to enter heaven. To be the Lord at his Second Advent implies the completion of the Completed Testament Age, and the completion of the Completed Testament Age implies standing in the position of completely realizing God's ideal of creation. So, a command from the returning Lord is like one from the perfected Adam, or from Jesus, standing on the foundation of his nation.

Up to now the internal realm of religion has been unable to win over the external world controlled by

Satan. But the Returning Lord has achieved a historic, cosmic victory over this world, and you have inherited that victory. You cannot be qualified to enter heaven unless you stand in the position of the Lord's partner, representing the people, the nation and the world. (302-286, 1999.06.26)

Plaque of Recognition presented to True Mother, June 14, 1999.

You are God's original child, with God's special mission. You are the fruit of the history of the providence of restoration who came to earth with the mission of the True Mother of humankind. Looking only upon Heaven, you won a victory over the suffering course of the providence of restoration and established the eternal tradition with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. After True Parents' Holy Wedding in 1960, you completed the mission of a true child before Heaven, the mission of a true wife before your husband, and the mission of a true parent before your children.

God's providence of restoration and True Parents' holy work of restoration culminated in victory in 1999, and in that year, you bequeathed to all people the textbook of True Parents' life course in 80 cities around the world through the "Rally for the Globalization of the True Family." I, as the Adam of original creation and as True Father of humanity, give you this plaque to celebrate your achievement through such pain, to thank Heaven and to praise your record in front of all descendants in heaven and on earth. (310-211, 1999.06.14)

I held a public ceremony to recognize True Mother's achievements. She is worthy of recognition by both the Unification Church and the Creator. You have to say, "There is our Mother! She is the same as Father!" I have been the right side of God, but now I have set up Mother as the left side of God. Therefore, we can enter the era of liberation through 7-1 Day, 7-8 Day, 7-9 Day and 7-10 Day. I was able to declare the completion of the age of indemnity, centered on the numbers 7 and 10. God thus far has appeared symbolically. However, now God appears in His embodiment, True Father; and True Mother has appeared as his partner. Therefore, the substantial Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven can be established. You also must become perfected women and men who achieve oneness in heart, oneness in body and oneness in thought, and who inherit the true love, true life and true lineage of the Kingdom of Heaven. As substantial parents, you must give birth to sons and daughters and complete your family. If you do not complete your family, you will not be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Instead, when you arrive in the spirit world, it will take you a long time to make up for what you could not accomplish on earth, maybe even through harsh affliction and suffering. Without going through such a course substantially, you cannot enter heaven. (414-279, 2003.08.04)

Through the "Rally for the Advancement of the Globalization of the True Family" in 80 cities around the world, True Mother won a supreme victory over the highest level of Satan's world. She achieved this position based upon the recognition by God, Satan and all people that she had fulfilled her responsibility as the True Mother. Starting with Christianity, she has gone beyond the realm of religion and has achieved victory. She can therefore occupy and act from the precious position of Eve whose mistake in front of Adam has been restored. I will proclaim this to heaven and earth. Therefore, I will publicly recognize Mother's achievement at the Ceremony for Proclaiming and Celebrating True Parents' Cosmic Victory. From now on, Mother stands in a position equal to my own. The age of the equality of man and woman has come. It is the age of the equality of man and woman based on love. Now is the time to unite women and to teach men about this. (302-232, 1999.06.14)

Because it was a crucial time within which for Mother to fulfill her responsibility, she went around the world holding "Rallies for the Advancement of the Globalization of the True Family." In China, it seemed it would be impossible to hold the rally, but Heaven worked to make it happen. Mother offered various conditions, based upon which Heaven had no choice but to help us. Mother established the condition through the 80-city speaking tour to make even Satan surrender to God, True Parents and humankind. Therefore, we are holding a ceremony honoring this victory; it is the Ceremony for Proclaiming and Celebrating True Parents' Cosmic Victory. (302-137, 1999.06.12)

True Parents have no cause for accusation whether they go to heaven or earth, and the congratulatory declaration of True Parents' cosmic victory must be made at all costs. It is a declaration confirmed by Heaven and humanity, by hell and Satan's world! Such a declaration must be made. Reverend Moon must offer a prayer under the name of God, the victorious Parent, declaring, "We will liberate God, heaven, all people on earth, the Unification Church, and even Satan who opposed us, and thereby realize peace, and the unified world of the Kingdom of Heaven that will create the original sovereignty of ideal love where the Fall did not exist!" (302-234, 1999.06.14)

Heavenly Father! On this day, June 14, 1999, at quarter past one in the afternoon, in the name of the True Parents standing here, I have declared cosmic liberation in the Pantanal; and on May 30, I made the "Congratulatory Declaration of the East-West (Global) Victory of True Parents." It is on this foundation that we now usher in this tremendously historic moment to make this declaration that welcomes victory centered on the victorious realm of True Parents who represent heaven and earth.

Father, I am aware that You buried deep within Your heart everything left by the sad history that began as a result of the sin committed by humanity's ancestors in front of Heaven, long harboring an anguish which no one could solve. I know that many difficulties arose in Your mind as You had to watch Satan accusing, cursing and ridiculing Your children in front of You.

In order to resolve this, You endeavored to form the tribe of love connected to God's lineage centered on the family of a perfected, non-fallen Adam, developing it into a people, a nation and finally the world, with the intent to begin the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. Unfortunately, Your efforts to establish this ideal faced continual failure.

I know that You had to endure a sad and embittered historical process as nations on Satan's side fought against one another, causing much bloodshed, each based on the belief that their own country was the best. At the same time, the moral corruption and atrocities of adolescents have caused a complete breakdown of family morals in all nations as we usher in the era of the end of all things, also called the Last Days, when the seeds that You planted in the Garden of Eden can finally bear fruit.

We are living in the end times when the morality of the original and unfallen, perfected family of Adam and Eve that God had wanted to establish in the Garden of Eden, has disappeared, and the family foundation is gone. To pass on the True Parents' ideology amid such circumstances, families that were broken are being raised, blessed and connected to God's lineage of love through Reverend Moon, centered on the moral foundation of families and adolescents. Through the globalization of the marriage Blessing, the capacity for people to go beyond their race and to be connected in heart as brothers and sisters, has expanded, and we have reached the stage where 400 million couples can be blessed.

Centered on the victorious realm that includes almost two-thirds of humanity, more than 3.2 billion people stand on Heaven's side, guarding Heaven, thanks to True Parents. They are surpassing Satan's world on earth, ushering in an era in which we are now able to live centered on God's realm of the heart. It is an era in which we can now instruct the submission of Satan under the name of Jehovah, bringing those on Satan's side to natural surrender in front of God through the connection of mercy. Aware that they cannot stand in front of the victorious dominion achieved through True Parents, they are asking for forgiveness and are surrendering voluntarily. Through the Blessing, and in accordance with all of True Parents' duties, Satan can no longer interfere in or command anything that possesses blood ties to the True Family. At the same time, all the things that Satan had been hiding will be clearly revealed and everyone who knows the Unification Principle will be able to know these all at once.

We have ushered in an era when in one night, all the people in the world can come to know about this through the internet and be taught about it. Hence, God is also aware that Satan has no place anymore, which is why Satan has surrendered to God, to True Parents and to humanity. As a result, True Parents, who can act as proxies for God's full authority, will receive Satan's surrender, remove the limits of the immoral hell of doom established by the false parents, and with the authority of God's lineage of love based on the heart, they will carry out the Blessing centered on Adam's family who are tied to God's lineage centered on the family of love -- the family of true love. Centered on the foundation of having blessed more than 400 million couples after the 12th phase of the Blessing, we can now freely conduct the Blessing anywhere without any opposition. We thank you for allowing such a victorious environment.

Satan has now finally been brought to submission, as a result of which a new era of global liberation has dawned wherein You can establish control over everything on Satan's side by actively exercising Your creative authority. Heavenly Father, we are truly grateful for Your grace in permitting us this time of the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory as the vertical foundation, along with the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory as the horizontal foundation.

Under Your guidance, Heavenly Father, from this day forward we can begin to reverse Satan's threats and intimidation. He has been cutting people down, dragging them to the scaffold and dooming them to hell. We welcome the era of freedom and liberation in which families blessed in the spirit world can come to their descendants to inspire them and reprimand them in turn, and to lead them, by force if necessary, to heaven rather than hell. The era has now arrived in which, by Your attaining control over the nations that connect together all of struggling humankind, they can become Your tribe, part of Your lineage, in front of the eternal sovereignty of love. As Your trans-national family, they can liberate all humanity the spirit world, as well as the True Parents and Yourself. This liberation will remove the position of the servant, so as to liberate everything to rise even beyond the original ideal of creation, where You can have sympathy for Satan. In front of Your authority, True Parents dedicate this era. Please, therefore, exercise Your power through this liberated sovereignty, moving between earth and the spirit world. With righteous judgment establish Your kingship of love and goodness, and Your independent dominion, and thus become the eternal King of love and Ruler of the universe, bequeathing to us eternal immortality of love.

The True Parents pledge to govern and teach those on earth the path that they should follow to fulfill the duties of Your filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. By guiding them to become a part of Your kindred having dominion over Your blessed Kingdom, True Parents will raise

them to become eternal heirs of Your Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Please accept all glory and honor and appoint this day as the day of proclamation. Please exercise Your autonomous authority of the kingship of goodness, whereby everything will turn out as You wish. We desire You to do so, again and again and again, and we proclaim and declare this in the name of the True Parents! (302234, 1999.06.14)

The mere fact that the Congratulatory Declaration for True Parents' Cosmic Victory could be made shows that the foundation of gratitude before God, the True Parents and heaven and earth now extends beyond the scope of God's hope when He created the universe. It also shows that the victorious hearts of God and the True Parents yearn for the era of the Fourth Adam to inherit the entire world and secure something greater than that of the perfected Adam. During their lives, the True Parents' must liberate God by following a path to perfection that is even hundreds of times more severe than Adam's original course. They must do so with a fully devoted heart that surpasses even God's love. After completing that path they must stand in the position of filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, saints in the world and God's divine sons and daughters, and thus inherit everything from Him. In order for us to accomplish this, we must offer everything. (302-237, 1999.06.14)

Cheon-mo-ji-mo Ji-gyeong-ji-mo (天慕之母地敬之母)

Cheon-mo-ji-mo (天慕之母) means the mother Heaven admires and longs for while Ji-gyeong-ji-mo (地敬之母) means the mother the earth reveres. The Chinese character for "earth" looks like it places itself at the very bottom, from where it attends or serves something. Hence, I put the character for "earth" or "ji" (地) next to the character for "revere," or "gyeong" (敬), so that the character for "earth" can attend the character of "revere." This means that when you look at the term, you realize I didn't write it randomly and that it has meaning. I have basically taught you the way you must follow. Cheon-mo-ji-mo is the mother that Heaven longs for and admires while Ji-gyeong-ji-mo means the mother that True Father reveres; that's what it means. (469-320, 2004.09.22)

Cheon-mo-ji-mo is the Mother that Heaven loves. Ji-gyeong-ji-mo means the Mother that earth can revere. I wrote this calligraphic message on the morning of March 7, 2004. What kind of day is March 7? When it comes to March, the number 12 of Cheon Il Guk is formed -- 3 multiplied by 4 is 12. The 7 forms the number 21 -- 3 multiplied by 7 is 21. It means that, as of now, God, those who are in heaven will appear on the right in the form of Father, and Mother will stand next to Him. Even if God is not there, True Parents will now have the authority to reign over the Kingdom of Heaven using the form of the actual parent model. This is what March 7 means. (446-307, 2004.04.28)

The Chinese character for "gyeong" has the same meaning as attending Father. Hence, you must attend Mother in the same manner you attend Father on earth. Ji-gyeong-ji-mo! Just as you love and yearn for God in heaven and on earth, you must also love and yearn for Mother, Cheon-mo-ji-mo. Next is Ji-gyeong-ji-mo! When using the term "gong-gyeong," or "revere" in Korean, it is usually used to express respect toward grandparents or the king. We do not use the term "samo-hada" or "yearn for" in Korean when it comes to a king. The character for "father" (父) is part of the Chinese character "gyeong" (敬). Why have four points been added in the Chinese character "mother" (慕)? There's one on the left, and the two points on the right are connected centered on the four-position foundation. The character "bu," or "father" (父) within the character "gyeong," or "revere" (敬) stretches out with its end going upward. This means that a woman must long for heaven and earth-centered on the Mother. I wrote the following: New morning of March 7, 2004 -- "Wi" [爲 -- to live for others] Mother. I too must love and yearn for Mother in the same way I love and yearn for my mother who gave birth to me. (468-219, 2004.09.14)

Mother must love and yearn for Heaven as she does for her own brother, her fiancé or future husband, her husband, father, grandfather and finally her king. This is the ladder that a woman must achieve. If Mother is loved and longed for by Heaven and revered by earth, then Mother can establish her own status. What is the morning of March 7, 2004? That is when I said, "Omma (Mother), I wasn't able to fulfill my filial duty to my mother; hence, if I call, "Omma!" in the middle of the night, please do not resent me for calling you such, but answer me in the same manner as I called you, and please take on the role of my mother." There's a saying that when you become old, you behave like a baby, isn't there? A grandfather in his 80s or 90s is said to be the most difficult son to care for. Hence, if you can become a mother who can raise such a son, then you can become a mother that God can truly respect. (468-220, 2004.09.14)

Chapter 3: The Chung Pyung Providence and Spiritual Blessings

The Chung Pyung holy ground

I have traveled all over Korea. In the 1960s I sent you out to places throughout the country and I explored all the noteworthy mountains throughout the country. As I explored, I asked myself, "Where should I place the anchor of the Unification Church? Where should I lay this foundation?" A good place certainly must be near a lake. The coast of the Eastern Sea is too far from Seoul. The western coast is not good either, because there are several cities along it. Also, because the tidal variation is extreme, mudflats

appear at ebb tide, and at high tide everything is covered with muddy water. Since I was looking to choose a place that was more than 30 minutes away from Seoul, I came to choose Songsan in the village of Seorak. That region is wonderful. I chose a spot in the very best area of the Chung Pyung region. (037-084, 1970.12.22)

Our land in Chung Pyung must become the worldwide fatherland, the hometown of heart for all people. I prayed that it would become a land that could connect heaven and earth, completing the victorious ideal of creation, and be revered by the cosmos, liberating the heart of God. I prayed also that it would become the sacred ground that would be the homeland of the world. We have now reached a point in time when the work to bring this about can begin in earnest. That is why I bought over 6,500 acres of land in this area. The mountain and the land around it form the grounds for our future hometown. It will become the hometown of all people of faith. We already exist in 185 countries worldwide. It is my hope that Chung Pyung will become the place where all the historical traditions of each of these countries can be displayed. Moreover, on this foundation we will build a training center and educational institution that will teach people how to renew the traditions of various national cultures and show how to connect them with Heaven. I prayed for this land, and my prayer actually came true; this is a historical fact. The fact that the Unification Church has this territory that represents the world's an amazing and victorious achievement. (282-046, 1997.03.10)

There needs to be a meeting place for the people of the world. Chung Pyung is that place. We will build an international training center at Chung Pyung. What are we going to do here? We will prepare a block for each country where we have our mission branches: a Japanese block for Japan, an American block for America, and so on. After buying a vast parcel of land, if a piece of it is designated to become the American block, we will entrust that area to the Americans. They will create a village that suits the taste of Americans, so that they can come and attend workshops. We are preparing a cosmopolitan village, a city where the surroundings will bring together the cultures of each country. Right in the middle of it we will build our training center. Accordingly, people who worked in other countries will come to this headquarters to attend seminars, and they should feel that it is a glorious thing for them to come to this place, to participate in the workshops, and then return to their own country. To accomplish this, we need a place with beautiful scenery, and we need to make our training center so impressive that visitors who come to tour Korea will remember it. (045-185, 1971.06.27)

When we were building the training center at Chung Pyung, we completed within eight days what should have taken as long as two months. I told them on the first day of July to level the ground, and on the second day we started construction work. In this way, we completed the construction in one week. The Chung Pyung training center is 300 square meters. The training center lecture hall itself is 230 square meters, so about 200 people can sleep there. We completed that building in one week. If you include today, it is 10 days. Today is July 11, 1971. We originally planned to finish by yesterday. That means we should not go beyond today. Counting this way, we have finished everything in eight days, and now we will paint it. We will paint and decorate it for three or four days. However, we are not supposed to decorate it well. If you ask why, it is because this building is in the position of a bride who is getting married while fleeing for her life during wartime. Even if she does not adorn herself well when she gets married, if she lives well after marrying her bridegroom, that is enough. (045-326, 1971.07.11)

This land of Chung Pyung can become the base where a person can be reborn. It is the place of cooperation between heaven, centering on the spirit, and earth, centering on the body. It can also be a place of the heart where a family or even a nation can be born, a place where the world and heaven and earth can be born, and where the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven can be built. If the Unification Church can stand in the position of having overcome hardships, we will be able to make dramatic progress. The work of bringing all this together and educating young people from all over the world will take place here at Chung Pyung. So will the work of gathering blessed families to attend workshops so that they can step forward to the world. This is something to be proud of. In fact, the people and nation can take pride in this place as representing the entire Republic of Korea. This is true not only for Korea and its people but also for Asia and the people of the world. (282-048, 1997.03.10)

Heavenly Father, since today will be a day of celebration when we start work on the palace of God at Chung Pyung holy ground, please allow this foundation to serve as the Panmunjom truce village that connects heaven and earth. This is the groundbreaking ceremony for building the foundation where the standard of righteousness can be established and good and evil can be distinguished in both the spiritual world and the physical world. Through this foundation, the divided North and South will be unified and a golden heavenly gateway will manifest itself. Therefore, all of heaven and earth are celebrating this day. I pray that God and True Parents will become one on earth, so that this core of heart can settle, and that through this we can transcend all historical ages throughout time and eternity. Please bless this place, that it may become a bridge of historical tradition connecting everything to the realm of one heart. I sincerely ask that You open wide the door of blessing, through which all people can become one in brotherly and sisterly love and all nations can become one. May all of heaven and earth, as one family of nations, enter the age of a new kingship on earth and in heaven, under the governance of God and True Parents. Please allow us to move quickly toward the ideal of unity, by which all ancestors who have gone to the spirit

world can unite with their descendants on earth and advance together toward the world of peace. Please bless us, so that after the restoration of the authority of the elder son and the authority of the parents, we can enter the age of the complete omnipotence of God, who can embrace the whole world as one great realm in the age of restored kingship. Please look with pleasure at this place, where members from every nation are gathered, praying for and celebrating this groundbreaking ceremony. I sincerely ask and beseech You to allow this to become a foundation of blessing that can connect to all nations. (282-117, 1997.03.10)

On this day, November 7, 1999, the dedication ceremony of Cheon Seong Wang Rim Palace at hand. I sincerely thank You that we are able to hold this consecration ceremony and welcome this day when we will be able to dedicate the structure that carries the name, Palace of Victory. Here, we pledge in spirit and in flesh the manifestation of victorious sovereignty. In this very place, we will attend God, as the blessed families of the earthly world and the blessed families of the heavenly world become one, under Heaven's watchful eye. Dear God, remember this day and recognize this place to be under the ownership of Heaven, so that it can become a center of worship for thousands of years and thousands of generations, as well as the starting point of the realm of heart, where flesh and spirit become one through the tradition of love. In all of heaven and earth, please permit this place to become the palace of devotion, the palace of love and the palace of worship where we respect the relationship of lineage. I sincerely ask and hope that, with the Parents of Heaven and Earth always at its center, You will permit this place to become the unique memorial point of origin for the vast consecration of our worldwide movement, connected by the sovereign power of eternal love. (312-304, 1999.11.07)

We are building the palace of the heavenly kingdom at Chung Pyung. All member nations of the United Nations should work together to build it on earth. Other nations, such as Russia, have built amazing palaces. We need to build an eternal palace, constructing it with complete devotion so that its value exceeds by many times even places such as the Louvre in France. As heirs of God, we need to fulfill this duty. (474-338, 2004.11.04)

True Parents who connect heaven and earth

God has not been able to work directly in the spirit world. Instead, God motivated angels, saints and good ancestors to perform His work. If He could have worked directly, the Fall would never have happened. True Parents are the ones who are building the bridge that allows God to be able to work directly. True Parents came to earth and are solving completely the reality of false parents. God comes down to earth on the foundation of this purification from the individual level to the cosmic level, and He is carrying out His work centering on that completed foundation. (323-232, 2000.06.03)

At the Second Advent, the one who is coming is the perfected Adam. Provided Eve becomes absolutely one centered on the perfected Adam, she will become a perfected Eve. Mother has come and she is doing the spiritual work of indemnity to fulfill that task herself. True Parents completed the creation of Adam and Eve on the world level, so, with all men standing in the man's position and all women standing in the woman's position, we are entering the age of the ideal family in which they are equal, centering on love. Everything that blocked heaven and earth and east and west has been removed, and we have returned to the innate, original standard. Now there is only one path you must take. You have only one way to enter the Kingdom of Heaven; that is by following True Parents. Satan has surrendered, and all the obstacles of Satan's world have disappeared. After you become one and move the nation, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven will be achieved by your unity with True Parents in front of God. (310-286, 1999.07.27)

Adam and Eve are the only son and only daughter representing countless generations in front of God. Even in our society, at the death of an only son who had come after six previous generations of only sons, the Korean government sends a gift to console the bereaved family. However, until now has anyone consoled God, who lost His only son and daughter? Only I am comforting God, who bears the sorrow of the Fall, while He says, "Please follow me. Please follow the path I am taking."

After pioneering that path, you must break down the gates of hell and open the gates to heaven. You must make it so that God can come and go as He likes. You must completely break down the walls of hell, that place of bitter sorrow. You must liberate God. I have completely destroyed the blockage of hell that has barred the way between the heavenly world and the earthly world. Now you have to build an expressway. Establish the standards for this, not only on earth but in the spirit world also. There must be standards set for the family, tribe, people, nation and entire cosmos. That will come about by men and women creating families. (302-227, 1999.06.14)

In one generation, I pioneered a highway to the spirit world from the individual level to the world level. In Danbury on February 1, 1985, I proclaimed the Day of Opening the Gates to Heaven. We must open the gate that connects a highway from the world on earth to the heavenly world. That highway must be built starting at the very bottom, from the most difficult place. The new origin of all history arises from prison. It is like that even in this world. Revolutionaries open new paths while in prison. Similarly, we

must build the highway from the very bottom of prison. If there is hell, a path will arise on which a man and a woman can even go out from hell. It is the same on earth. True Parents are opening paths that were blocked and partitioned off by the false parents. The blockages perpetuated by connections of lineage based on the love of the false parents, are opened by inheriting the lineage of the new Blessing based on the love of the True Parents. (166-243, 1987.06.07)

True Parents must destroy the walls of hatred and resentment among people that have arisen throughout history. They are not doing this work while sitting on thrones as the sovereigns of a nation. Since humankind is living in hell on earth, and people are suffering in hell in the spirit world, True Parents must open all the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world, connect individuals to the nation and world, and construct a road so people can pass from earth to the heavenly world. They must create a connecting highway, one road that is the main thoroughfare.

Your mind and body should become one, and from that standard of unity, when you pass through the stages of the family, tribe, people and nation, and go beyond that to the world and into the heavenly realm, there should be no walls. We must destroy all barriers. The opening of the gates of hell in the spirit world and of the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven is the final problem. After going to the bitter end of earthly hell, you open the gates there. If, after standing at the gates of hell in the spirit world, you do not open those gates, you will not be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Only people who triumph over hell are able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

By what means are they victorious? Not by means of prayer. They must gain victory by possessing the love of God. If they do not, they cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. To help you, after passing through earth centering on the love of God and opening even the gates of hell in the spiritual world, I have paved a road from earth to heaven. (140-043, 1986.02.01)

Only True Parents can clear up the spirit world and the earthly world and complete the ideal, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. The era of God's all-transcendence, omnipresence, omnipotence and all-immanence has come. We can establish a general organization for the world as well as for each country. Satan's world, which was all-powerful, is completely ineffective in front of God's authority, and we are passing into the era of God's absolute authority and power. True Parents are the ones who are doing that. It starts from True Parents. (293-326, 1998.06.07)

The sphere of True Parents' activity is not limited to earth. Because I am concerned about the vast spirit world, even to the ends of that world, if there is a shadow of Satan anywhere, I must eradicate it. It is not enough to pay indemnity in the same way as before. Now True Parents need to actually settle accounts. I must reverse the failure of Adam and Eve, the failures at Jesus' time and the cosmic failures and restore everything that was defiled by Satan. After bringing Satan to surrender, I will give the command that can liquidate these debts. At that point, the perfected Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven will become possible. That is the logic of true love. (397-208, 2002.11.24)

The Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God fulfilled the hopes of the religious world. It fulfilled all the goals of the providence of salvation. The ideal of creation shall be achieved, re-creating all things, giving birth to men and women, producing blessed families and realizing an ideology of a realm free from the Fall, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. It is not just some individuals or families but all human beings who will become liberated, blessed central families. The empty Kingdom of Heaven can be filled all at once. In other words, all the historical failures can be restored according to the horizontal standard. This restoration will patch up the empty places. The ideal Kingdom of Heaven is being built on earth as well as in heaven. God can stride throughout the spirit world and across the earth as He desires. (346-239, 2001.07.01)

Because the grace of the Blessing has reached from top to bottom, all the way down to earth, we are connecting to the age of the spirit world Blessing. Provided we make that heaven-to-earth connection, restoration will be possible. Until now, after a loving husband and wife came to the end of their lives on earth, they became separated when they went to the spirit world. Each entered the spirit world according to his or her individual standard. After going to the spirit world, when they pressed something like a video-player button, everything about how they lived on earth was revealed. Everything was recorded. An angel would take them to the place that corresponded to their spiritual standard. If ten members in a family had different spiritual standards, they had to separate. They could not meet each other. Now they have been liberated from that. The ones in the spirit world who once loved each other on earth can now receive the Blessing. We have given the Blessing to spirit persons. The gate has been opened and, because of that, the liberation of hell is possible. Thus, we have established the standard whereby we can say we have completed the foothold of the Kingdom of Heaven by creating a one-way path to the Kingdom of Heaven, the innate, original, unfallen world. So, we are tracking down all the individuals and families that were divided on earth and weaving them together globally. When the realm of unification in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven is actualized by liberating everyone in the spiritual world and making it possible to connect everyone in the spiritual and physical world together, the age will have arrived when God can be liberated. (283-146, 1997.04.08)

The Ascension of Hong Sun-ae Dae Mo Nim

From the day she began to walk down her path of faith in the Unification Church, Dae Mo Nim endured even cruel humiliation with only gratitude, thus setting an exemplary model for practicing faith in the Unification Church, a historical fact for which I am truly grateful. To pave the way for Mother, she withstood unendurable agonies of the heart, both internally and externally, and prayed for that one moment of victory. All her days of such prayers have not only gone down in history as a time of blessing, but have also become a tradition that all of us should follow in our own path of faith. Therefore, please permit this tradition to become a standard that should be inherited by all people. I earnestly hope and pray that You will allow all the stories and historic records she left behind to be of help in realizing Your Will and to serve as the basis for protecting the Will of the providence. (223-209, 1991.11.10)

Since she has departed this world and passed on to the spirit world, I pray that You will permit Dae Mo Nim to become a bridge of heart linking the heavenly world and the physical world, and that You will also allow her to fulfill her responsibility of bringing together Judaism and the Unification Church centering on Christianity, by strengthening the bridge that connects Heung Jin and Jesus.

While on this earth, Dae Mo Nim knew of the Will of the providence pursued by Heaven and strove for it, not only in the age of persecution centered on Japan of the satanic realm but also in the three historical ages of Eve, in which all preparations were made for the Lord coming again to Korea. Dae Mo Nim contributed greatly to connecting the internal providence of Heaven to the Unification Church by offering constant devotion until we were able to receive True Mother. In light of this, she went to the spirit world as a representative of the proud women of the Unification Church, and all women can remember her as the representative of all women of the past, present and future. Moreover, she left behind an exemplary life to be followed, a tradition of serving and attending Heaven that should be inherited, for which grace we are truly thankful to You, Heavenly Father.

In the 70 or so years of her life, she led a life of service to everyone, through which she formed connections to all members of the Unification Church. At the same time, she hid from everyone when she shed tears, blood and sweat as she worked all alone to pave the way for True Mother. She was the fence that protected Mother and the guide who led Mother down her path until she could reach this victorious day, for which I am grateful to her.

Tomorrow, she will leave this place and go to stand in a position where we can no longer meet her in the flesh on earth, but we will still meet her in the spirit world in spirit. She will now be entrusted with the responsibility of serving as an intermediary between the Unification Church and Heaven, so that she can connect us to God and He can express His concerns to the people on earth through her. True Parents have appointed her to take on this important responsibility, so, Heavenly Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will accept her as such. (1989.11.06, Shinmun-ro Residence, Seoul)

We know that Your daughter, of whom You are proud and who You desire to see, is moving on to play the role of the bridge linking the heavenly world and the earthly world for all eternity, for the realization of Your Will. Therefore, True Parents on earth send this daughter to You, after mobilizing all of heaven and all good descendants on earth to praise her as the one symbol of love, the symbol of mother's love and the symbol of daughter's love who can be embraced in Your bosom; so please, Heavenly Father, take her to Your heart.

The condition by which she can be praised for her deeds, and at the same time be a source of pride to You, is that she worked hard for the sake of all the people, and that she walked the path of sacrifice to the end of her days to save all of humankind, lost in misery, cherishing within herself Your heart of love to guide all people to the path of truth. Therefore, please look after her on her way.

Heavenly Father! Through her passing, please allow the entire spirit world to be connected to the foothold of the victory You have permitted on earth, so that the good ancestors can be directly resurrected through their good descendants on earth. Please allow this connection to be made, strengthened and expanded, so that they can work for Your Will.

All spirits who have passed on after attending the Unification Church, Jesus centered on Heung Jin, and billions of believers centered on the four great saints! Please welcome this day with joy and welcome this daughter, so that she can lead you to the positions you desire, and bequeath to you the heart of filial piety and loyalty in serving Heaven. Father, we earnestly hope and pray that You will bless her in her such endeavors. (195-128, 1989.11.07)

After True Parents' Holy Wedding, Dae Mo Nim and True Mother had to work hard to deal with criticism from various types of women, ranging from the wife of a laborer to a lady of the royal family line. Mother could not endure this all by herself; three generations -- Grandmother Jo Won-mo, Dae Mo Nim and True Mother -- had to face it together. Knowing Dae Mo Nim had fulfilled her responsibility in this, I gave her

the title Daemo, which means "Great Mother." The way of love that all women need to walk has high walls to overcome. Unless True Mother could demolish those walls, women would come to blame her. Dae Mo Nim appealed to God, crying out that she could take all True Mother's burdens on her behalf, and she actually did so. She also ardently prayed that she could dissolve all the worries, bitterness and sorrows of the True Family.

Now, having passed through the painful path of sacrifice, we have come to the era when we can go beyond the national level and even the world level, and proceed toward the world of unity and liberation. Hong Sun-ae truly accomplished all her responsibilities; hence, she deserves to be attended by all. That is why I named her Dae Mo Nim. To be an example to your families and descendants, all of you should inherit Dae Mo Nim's heart of single-minded loyalty and establish a proper tradition of attending God. This grandmother lived only to attend God. In attending God in your families, you should fulfill the way of a loyal heart with single-mindedness even greater than hers. On November 4, 1989, in honor of Dae Mo Nim, I created a calligraphic tribute, Chungshim Bongshin (忠心奉身), which means "she dedicated herself with a loyal heart" to God and True Parents. Anyone, like her, who goes to the spirit world after a life of sacrifice lived with single-minded devotion will open the gate to receive blessings from God, free from any accusation. (195-152, 1989.11.07)

From now on none of you should accumulate wealth for yourself. It is good to be frugal, but I suggest that you be frugal so that you can make a greater offering for the Will. You should be able to invest all your savings for your clan, for your nation, and for the reunification of Korea. Do not think only of your own family. The only thing you need is a heart burning with love for God. Like Dae Mo Nim, you should live 24 hours a day thinking only of how you will fulfill the Will of God and True Parents. She had nothing else in her heart but that; she did not think of anything else. Because of this, she deserves our utmost respect. That is why I bestowed on her the title Daemo, "Great Mother." (208-346, 1990.11.21)

You need to place yourself in the position of a spirit. People who think about how they lived in the past cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. They must take the position of being just a spirit. That is why you must make all kinds of devotional offerings, just like Hong Sun-ae Dae Mo Nim. There is nothing else for it. You must only think about True Parents and God. If any other thought disrupts you, you will not be able to walk in a straight line; you will not be able to follow the path of love. Just because you have received the Blessing on earth does not mean that things will happen just like that. (208-343, 1990.11.21)

Dae Mo Nim made unforgettable contributions toward Mother's history. Whenever Mother gave birth to a child, Dae Mo Nim offered more devotion for that child than anyone else. She was a representative mother who, as long as she was alive, served True Parents' family with one heart and one mind, for which reason she was bestowed the name Daemo (Great Mother). In addition, she invested herself fully in offering devotion, so I presented her with the calligraphy, "Choong Shim Bong Cheon (忠心奉天)," meaning "Heart of Loyalty and Service to Heaven." Even after passing into the spirit world, Dae Mo Nim is continuing her work, together with Heung Jin, as a representative of the various parts of the spirit world. Therefore, if you offer sincere devotion as well, you can be connected to Christian believers centered on Dae Mo Nim, Heung Jin and Jesus in the spirit world, or even other saints. Dae Mo Nim is playing the role of such a bridge. (265-011, 1994.11.07)

Ancestor liberation and Blessing

Chung Pyung works are Mary's works, the works of the living Mary. They are the works carried out on behalf of the Mother. All our blessed families must find a way to participate in them. (274-310, 1995.11.03)

Chung Pyung works are carried out centering on Heung Jin, Dae Mo Nim and Chungmo-nim within the realm of the grace of the Blessing, which was created after True Parents set the condition of indemnity and ended the division that had existed until now. Chungmo-nim is the mother of Adam's family, and Dae Mo Nim is the Holy Spirit of Jesus' age in substantial form. Next comes True Mother. It goes through three generations. The works are carried out centering on the substantial forms of the three generations of Chungmo-nim, Dae Mo Nim and True Mother. Both Dae Mo Nim and Chungmo-nim depend on True Mother. All women are Mother's representatives. Since True Father, as the True Parent, came with the seed of life through God's lineage, he is going to share it with all people through Mother. (314-140, 2000.01.02)

All women who have gone to the spirit world should attend me as they would their elder brother, their husband and their father, centering on True Mother. Therefore, all of them should become Mother's younger sisters, and Dae Mo Nim should stand in the position of their mother. That is why Dae Mo Nim is working to bring the spirit world under control in the place of Mother. Dae Mo Nim is learning from Mother. By forming a connection to her as the representative of three generations of ancestral mother -- the mothers of the fallen world -- the heavenly world and the physical world can be united. (314-141, 2000.01.02)

In the age of restoration, all evil spirits on the earth plane move centering on the actual world. For people to develop and grow, they need to find the way to the level of God's love through all things, and spirits move in the same way. That is why all things have owners. They have spirits attached to them, living within them. Those spirits are not in the spirit world. Afterward, they find that created things are not enough, so they attach themselves to people. They cling to people, who can be restored. Human beings represent the love of all things. Because People are the path by which love can be perfected, as well as the original beings who can secure all the stages of love, spirits cling to them so that they too can be liberated. (293-250, 1998.06.01)

Large numbers of spirits enter the body of each person. The work at Chung Pyung removes these spirits, and beams of light created by True Parents guide those spirits, enabling them to ascend upward from hell in the spirit world. Anyone is able to follow those beams of light. Good spirits are all able to do that. I am opening the path whereby they will be able to ascend. I am completely removing those walls and conditions, opening doors of liberation. Because of that, spirits are able to go to the Kingdom of Heaven in a short time. Now, because many people are contacting evil spirits and are suffering harm, we must completely sever this connection and sweep away all the evil spirits. Through the Fall, Adam's family became an evil family. We must do the spiritual work of recreating our ancestors. We must make families that are in the position of good archangels. We are entering the age of liberating and giving the Blessing to those in the spirit world. We are giving many blessings of enormous value. (298-212, 1999.01.08)

The Chung Pyung training center is the base that will set you free from evil spirits. This training center exists even in the spirit world. Through it, you must solve the sins you committed on earth that are not yet indemnified. If you become one with True Parents and indemnify your sins, you will not go to the training center when you go to spirit world but will directly enter the Kingdom of Heaven. You must become parents who give birth to children who are able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, thus creating people who are able to go directly to the Kingdom of Heaven.

Now I have completely settled the accounts for the age of restoration through indemnity. From now, since your sons and daughters should go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven, if your children cannot go there, you also will have to wait outside on the threshold. You will wait until the debt caused by sin is completely canceled. That is the problem. Instead of hell, a prison for blessed families will be made in the spirit world. Paradise will arise where blessed families who cannot pass over the threshold to enter the Kingdom of Heaven will wait. You will have to wait until the time when you are liberated in the spirit world from the sins your children have committed. Despite being blessed, a sinful person cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. The debt caused by your sins first must be completely canceled. Everything I am saying about the spirit world is accurate. We must live our lives the right way; excuses are not allowed. (424-104, 2003.11.04)

When you go to the Chung Pyung training center, you must participate in ancestor liberation ceremonies and Blessing ceremonies. Provided your ancestors are liberated and blessed quickly, as blessed ancestors in the angelic world they will do the work of protecting the blessed families on earth. Accordingly, there will be no hardships on earth and you will escape from the realm where Satan can invade. If you do not do that, you cannot escape, and you will remain as you are in Satan's world. (320-118, 2000.03.31)

You blessed families are tribal messiahs. You need to liberate your relatives in the spirit world and this earthly world. You have that responsibility. For the sake of your ancestors, establish the same kind of indemnity conditions you set when you married. If you do not do so, you will not be able to mobilize the angels or summon your ancestors. We are pulling people out of hell. Angels have been sent to pull them out. (310-097, 1999.06.06)

You must hasten to liberate and bless your ancestors. Only then will your ancestors and my beloved Heung Jin be able to come again to earth and cooperate with you. Because the lineal standard exists up to age 16, based on Adam's age before the Fall, at the same time that you bless your ancestors, the angelic world is restored and the fallen world is completely liberated. Because the archangel made a mistake in the position of the older brother, we have to reverse that which caused the destruction of the family and pass through the place of indemnity. We must receive the cooperation of the spirit world. We must reverse the positions of the older brother and the younger brother; the older brother becomes the younger brother. (424-102, 2003.11.04)

All people descended from Adam, but because of the Fall, they went to the spirit world with the lineage of the archangel. We should not abandon the Cain-type spirit persons. We must bless everyone. After blessing them, we have to establish the horizontal line. We should gather and bless people who died before they could get married. Also, spirits who died as infants should grow up and be blessed. Youth of 16 and older who enter the spirit world without having been married shall also be blessed. In the spirit world, we, True Parents, have blessed 1.6 billion couples from among those who died young or died single. The number of those who have received the Blessing is increasing. For example, we have done Blessings of one billion couples, ten billion couples and 12 billion couples. We are giving the Blessing on the foundation of the unmarried men and women on earth.

Just as evil spirits become attached to and enter people on earth, good spirits also enter people and coach them. We can expel evil spirits who have entered men and women, so that good spirits who received the Blessing can supervise earth and protect us. Because of that, as soon as they hear about the Blessing, young people will come to receive it. You must create an environment that inspires and attracts them to do that. (301 -211, 1999.05.01)

The Chung Pyung works are reuniting the archangel and Adam and Eve who were separated in the Garden of Eden. We are carrying out a movement to purify Satan's fallen lineage. Because the people who have gone through the spiritual process at Chung Pyung are purified, we are giving the spiritual Blessing. Since the conclusion of the Blessing of 3.6 million couples, my beloved Heung Jin and Dae Mo Nim have been giving the Blessing at the Chung Pyung training center. They are giving the Blessing from the position of spiritual parents. Since this work was left unfinished by Jesus, working from the substantial realm of the archangel, I am cleansing everything to do with Adam and Eve, who had fallen away from the spiritual standard, and I am substantially restoring the spiritual standard. We are indemnifying the situation of Adam, who at the age of 16 was enveloped in the substantial archangelic realm and whose body became the body of Satan.

Engrafted through love, we are the body of True Parents. Historically, impure love emerged, but we are establishing an affirmative standard of love. Heung Jin is doing that work. Jesus could not embody the love of a true parent and so could not connect what had been divided, but True Parents' children in the spirit world are in an internal position to connect that which was divided due to Jesus being unable to marry. Dae Mo Nim is also doing that work, through mother-son cooperation. Her position is that of Mary who gave birth to Jesus. Because the responsibility of Mary is now fulfilled, we can give new life to Jesus. (290-178, 1998.02.22)

Because I proclaimed the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, we can make a home on this earth and live. Because there is an individual's home, a family's home, a tribe's home, a people's home, a nation's home, the world's home, and the home of heaven and earth, we can live here. If we pursue this activity, and if we resolve to bring the entire earthly world to a global level of liberation, God will descend. After that, the angelic realm will descend, and we will appear leading our good ancestors. Our good ancestors are the older siblings in the angelic position. Angels do not have a body or a family. The fallen Satan does not have a family. However, your ancestors differ from the archangel. They inherit the body of Adam, and we have come into the age where they can have a family. Accordingly, we are giving the Blessing to our ancestors in heaven, together with the Blessing on earth. (305-011, 1998.03.29)

Part 6: The Declaration of Ultimate Unity and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

Outline of True Mother's Life 6: The Declaration of Ultimate Unity and the Era of Cheon Il Guk

True Parents have walked a long and difficult path, with lifelong dedication to the liberation of God from His pain and for human salvation. After proclaiming the Enthronement Ceremony for the Kingship of God, True Father poured all his energy into the establishment of the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity, Cheon Il Guk. Following True Father's Holy Ascension, centering on True Mother, Cheon Il Guk Foundation Day was proclaimed and the providence for the settlement of Cheon Il Guk is being carried out. The era when the Garden of Eden, the ideal of creation, has been restored, just as if the Fall had not occurred and the world had not come under the realm of Satan, has arrived.

True Parents have concluded, completed and perfected the providence of restoration and have proclaimed the completion of all their responsibilities and of the mission that they came to the earth to fulfill. This was possible because they achieved ultimate unity centering on God and achieved oneness in heart, oneness in body, oneness in thought, oneness in harmony and oneness in their core, with God.

True Parents' ultimate unity

Since we entered the new millennium, the twenty-first century, the providence has been moving more urgently. Beginning with the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship on January 13, 2001, True Parents have inaugurated a variety of activities in order to build the foundation for the establishment of God's nation of Cheon Il Guk in substance. From the mid-1980s to the beginning of the 1990s, True Parents as the Messiah, Savior, returning Lord and True Parents, have restored the authority of the elder son and the authority of the parents and have proclaimed this realm of victory before Heaven. Based on this foundation, they officiated the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship on January 13, 2001, which opened a new era in which God could exercise his dominion with full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and omnipotence. Then on February 6, 2003, at the Chung Pyung Heaven and Earth Training Center, True Parents officiated the Holy Marriage Blessing of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gates of Cheon Il Guk. This opened the path for us to register as Cheon Il Guk

citizens. True Parents were also recognized as the King and Queen of Peace by both political and religious leaders in Korea and America.

Through these special ceremonies, True Parents brought to a conclusion a great turning point of human history. Thereafter, on May 5, 2004, they proclaimed Ssang Hab Shib Seung Il (Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Fives) and declared the close of the Era Before the Coming of Heaven and the opening of the Era After the Coming of Heaven. Then on July 8, 2010, they held the first Cosmic Assembly for the Settlement of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind Who, as God's Embodiment, Proclaim the Word. They presided over a great number of these assemblies and achieved ultimate unity. They have concluded, completed and perfected the providence of restoration and have proclaimed that they have accomplished all the responsibilities and missions that they came to the earth to fulfill. This means that the era has arrived when God can enter True Parents' bodies and teach and guide us on earth.

In 2010, on the 8th day of the 5th month by the heavenly calendar (June 19) at 2:20 a.m., in Las Vegas, True Parents proclaimed that they had achieved oneness in heart, oneness in body, oneness in thought, oneness in harmony and oneness in their core with God, vertically; and on the 15th day of the 5th month by the heavenly calendar (June 26) at 3:25 a.m., they proclaimed that they had achieved ultimate unity horizontally. On that foundation, they declared the completion, conclusion and closure of the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament Ages, and proclaimed the era of God's full transcendence, full immanence, full authority and omnipotence. Then, on the 17th day of the 11th month by the heavenly calendar (December 11) in 2011, True Father announced at Cheon Jeong Gung:

"Now that all beings in heaven and on earth are aligned with God the Creator's original standard of creation that has now been restored, I declare the completion, conclusion and closure of the entire providence and the final victory." He then proclaimed, "All is finished!" On the 17th and 18th days of the 11th month by the heavenly calendar (December 11 and 12) in 2011 at the Ocean Cheon Jeong Gung Palace, True Parents wrote the proclamation of the final Cheon II

Guk victory: "God and True Parents are completely one. God is complete, perfected and fulfilled. Aju! Heaven is here. Congratulations, Sun Myung Moon! Aju!"

Proclamation of Cheon II Guk Foundation Day

Beginning in 2010 when he proclaimed the heavenly calendar, True Father pushed himself relentlessly, to the point of being cruel to his own body. Nevertheless, he traveled overseas on more than ten occasions to speak at locations throughout the world. He maintained his schedule of daily Hoon Dok Hae and personally educated members, speaking about the urgency of advancing the providence. For the sake of world restoration, True Father wanted to complete the unfinished providence of the United Nations. So, on the 27th day of the 5th month by the heavenly calendar (July 16) in 2012, True Father inaugurated the Abel Women's UN. This was the last providential organization Father established during his earthly lifetime.

A month before his Holy Ascension, on the 15th day of the 6th month by the heavenly calendar (August 2), True Father suddenly visited the Osan School, which had been relocated to Seoul from his hometown of Jeongju in North Korea, as if searching for his hometown. There he took some time to reminisce over his life.

At Cheon Jeong Gung, Father sat at a table with Mother, looked into her eyes for a long time and told her how grateful he was to her. After that, he took his time to look around Cheon Jeong Gung and some parts of the Chung Pyung Complex as if to engrave them into his memory. The following week, on the 25th day of the 6th month (August 12) at Cheon Jeong Gung he prayed, "Dear God, blessed are You. Please allow me to offer my life for You." The following day, on the 26th day of the 6th month (August 13), he offered his final recorded prayer on earth, in which he proclaimed in the presence of True Mother, "I have completed everything for the providence of restoration." At 1:54 a.m. on the 17th day of the 7th month by the heavenly calendar (September 3) in 2012, at the age of 93 by Korean counting, True Father ascended to heaven.

On the 2nd day of the 8th month by the heavenly calendar (September 17), in 2012, two days after True Father's Seonghwa Ceremony, a Third-Day Memorial Service was held at the Cheongshim Peace World Center. True Mother gave a special address to leaders gathered from around the world, in which she urged them to "continue without stopping." Mother gave guidance on the direction that we as a community must go, including inheriting and passing on True Parents' tradition, realizing the ideal of blessed families, completing the tribal messiah mission and building a substantial culture of heart in our communities.

Cheon II Guk Foundation Day was proclaimed in front of all of heaven and earth on the 13th day of the 1st month by the heavenly calendar (February 22) in 2013 by True Mother on earth, in unity with True Father in heaven. As part of the ceremony, they officiated at the Enthronement Ceremony of the True

Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind in Cheon Il Guk. Foundation Day is the beginning and origin of Cheon Il Guk in substance, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven, where the ideal of one human family under God can be realized. After the long wait of 6,000 years, a new heaven and new earth opened and a new day dawned. As God created heaven and earth in the beginning, True Parents have been fulfilling, step by step, the providential work of re-creation to inaugurate Cheon Il Guk in heaven and on earth for the sake of all humankind.

From that time on, True Mother has inherited True Father's legacy and is tirelessly carrying out a diversity of projects in order that we can reach beyond the basic establishment of Cheon Il Guk to the point where Cheon Il Guk is securely settled and prospering. True Mother, in a position of oneness in heart, oneness in body, oneness in thought, oneness in harmony and oneness in her core with True Father, has published the three volumes of the Holy Scriptures of Cheon Il Guk, established the Cheon Il Guk Constitution, inaugurated the Hyojeong World Peace Foundation and bequeathed the four Cheon Il Guk Holy Items, all as aspects of the internal preparations for this undertaking. True Parents have also left a legacy for the victory of Vision 2020 through practical projects such as the establishment of the Sunhak Peace Prize, the International Association of Parliamentarians for Peace, and Youth and Students for Peace.

True Parents are true people in the original pattern of God's ideal, embodying the internal nature and external form of the incorporeal God. Their lives, the tradition and the teachings they have established horizontally are the model form that human beings must emulate and learn from. The absolute, unique, unprecedented True Parents have shown us that they are the origin that will eternally shine forth the light of God's love and truth throughout the ages of history.

Chapter 1: The Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship and the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents

History of the providence for the restoration of the authority of the elder son, the authority of the parents and the authority of the king

The Old Testament Age was the age in which brothers were to unite. The New Testament Age was the age for children to unite with parents. The Completed Testament Age is the age for people to unite with kingship. These three ages were to restore the authority of the elder son, parents and king. All of this, including the right of kingship, could have been restored in Jesus' time had the people of Israel attended Jesus as the True Parent. However, they did not do so, and the providence was prolonged. That is why the time for restoring God's kingship has arrived now, in the Completed Testament Age. (304-011, 1999.09.05)

In the Old Testament Age, the priests sacrificed animals to pave the way for the son and the daughter to come. That son was the Messiah. They offered the things of creation to prepare a foundation for the Messiah to come to earth. The providence has been moving forward following the course of the Fall, but in reverse order. The son then came to earth and shed his blood. He died on the cross. If the people of Israel had united with him, Jesus would not have died. Yet the people did not believe in him; hence, he had to shed his blood. What was this son originally supposed to accomplish? He was to pave the way for the emergence of True Parents. Jesus was to be the True Father, and the True Mother was to come and be made ready as the Bride to meet the Bridegroom, Jesus, who was to right the wrongs of the world. For this to happen, first the Cain-Abel relationship that was lost needed to be resolved. Cain and Abel in Jesus' day were represented on the national level by the people of Israel and Judaism. In the Last Days they are represented by communism and democracy. We must resolve this persistent Cain-Abel problem. This will be done by restoring kingship on the world level. (280-079, 1996.11.01)

The Old Testament Age was the age of brothers. At the time of Jesus, Judaism was in the position of Abel and the people of Israel were in the position of Cain. These two brothers were supposed to unite, and on that foundation, they were to connect to the teaching of "parentism." First, they had to unite centering on the mother, after which they would have connected to the father. This is how they would have been able to establish blessed families centered on Jesus. However, this was not accomplished, and the providence in the Old Testament Age to restore the authority of the elder son came to naught. The New Testament Age was to restore the authority of the parents and the Completed Testament Age is to restore the kingship, but all of this was lost. Hence, the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages must all be brought to completion. In the Old Testament Age, animals were sacrificed as offerings. In the New Testament Age, Jesus, the Son came to establish the nation, but when he could not, he had to become the sacrificial offering. When the age of the True Parents arrived, the path of the sacrificial offering still remained to be fulfilled before True Parents could attend God. Thus, while True Parents were on earth, they had to follow a 40-year course of suffering in order to attend God. This was the path they had to walk in order to bring God down to earth. This was how they connected the spiritual world and physical world together, enabling God to work freely between the two worlds. It was how they brought liberation to both worlds. (304-032, 1999.09.05)

If the people of Israel had united with Jesus as the Messiah, the authority of the elder son could have been restored at that time. Unity between brothers comes about when they share the same level, the same value, and the same standard. Fundamental unity cannot be achieved without the Messiah, who represents the elder son. But the people of Israel were unable to unite with the Messiah. Had they made unity with Jesus, he could have formed a family, and the Blessing could have been given to the people of Israel as the chosen people. From this point of view, Jesus needed to marry, to celebrate the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. Through that marriage, he and his Bride were to have become the True Parents. Then, the Messiah's family would have become the elder son family, and the people of the world would have formed younger son families. This would have established the authority of the parents. If the people of the world had received the Blessing and become blessed families, then, centering on the Messiah, they would have gone beyond the national level and expanded in number over the years until they had established a worldwide Christian cultural sphere as the Second Israel. This would have been "one nation under God," a nation representing the whole world.

This was meant to happen immediately after the Second World War. Even though it did not happen, we have now built a foundation of families throughout the world who have received the Blessing. Based on these families, all humanity needs to focus on one point and attend God as the King. This is the purpose for which the Lord returns. (303-097, 1999.08.08)

The Lord must come again because the authority of the elder son was not established in Jesus' day. As Jesus was unable to achieve this and lost his life, the Lord must restore it when he returns. He must offer to God the authority of the elder son, the authority of the True Parents on the family level and the authority of kingship on the global level. God will take possession of all things through the True Parents. All things originally belonged to God, so by passing through the era of indemnity, all things must be dedicated to God. Fallen human beings cannot hold on to the right of possession. Nothing belongs to you. You must unite with the Lord at his Second Advent and offer all your possessions to God by vesting them with the Lord. Because the First Adam was unable to reach perfection, God could not have dominion over the world. Accordingly, you need to offer everything back to God through the perfected Adam. Then, in the position that you have not fallen and have dissolved all of God's bitter pain, things will be given back to you. From the day you receive the things that return to you, you will inherit royal authority over heaven and earth, as well as the authority of the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the horizontal authority of the elder son in heaven and on earth.

Once True Parents establish the authority of the elder son, they will then establish the authority of the parents, and after that the authority of kingship. When all these expand on the global level, all people can also achieve the authority of the elder son, parents and king even within their own families. When you stand on that foundation, you will be able to fully liberate the spiritual and physical worlds. God also will be liberated at that time. Hence, you will be able to attend the liberated Lord God and live forever in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven, which will last for eternity. Families of the world that succeed in attaining these levels of authority, of elder son, parents and king, will attend Jesus as the king of kings. Everyone must attend him as the king. (303-098, 1999.08.08)

I have to eliminate everything that is based on the sovereignty of Satan's world, which has come down through the generations. I have to indemnify the betrayals of Heaven and the betrayals of God's Will, and restore God's victorious dominion. I have to sweep away everything that became corrupted under Satan's sovereignty, from the era of the individual and the era of the tribe up to the present. To achieve that, I must restore the authority of the elder son. I must restore the authority of the elder son and then the authority of the parents. Originally, the parents were to be the owners, but Satan became the owner and king. For that reason, as the younger son who is on God's side, I am moving forward to restore the authority of the elder son, the authority of the parents and the authority of the king. (248-082, 1993.07.01)

The central ideology of the fallen world, as well as that before the creation of the world, is the institution of the authority of the elder son. The second is the authority of the parents. The third is the authority of the king and the fourth is the establishment of the royal family. These are the four central goals. You have had no idea that history had such a beginning. History has proceeded up until now in a conflict between the primacy of material goods and spirituality. This is because people have not known the Principle. Starting with the authority of the elder son, if Adam and Eve had not fallen, after the authority of the elder son, the authority of the parents and that of the king would have been established right away, and the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven would have been quickly built. However, because all of this was lost, it had to be restored in reverse order through many arduous tasks. The possibility of creating the Kingdom of Heaven by spreading out horizontally through the second son after the elder son became a parent and then a king -- that is, setting up the authority of the elder son as the king's central authority centering on the first son and the second son -- was all lost. Because the authority of the elder son was lost, it must be found and restored. Without it, you cannot establish the Kingdom of Heaven; you cannot achieve the ideal world.

Adam should have become the elder son and then become the parent. Adam's family should have become the royal family. Had Adam not fallen, he would, as elder son, have become the king, and the second son

would have become one of the royal family. All his family would have become members of the royal family. The authority of the elder son would have lasted for thousands of years and expanded to a nation and then to all of humankind. This means the world would have had one central royal authority and one royal family centering on the authority of the parents. There would have been one single root. (247-135, 1993.05.01)

We established USA (United to Serve America) to reclaim the foundation that was lost with the failure of America and of Christianity in America. After restoring the authority of the elder son in this way, we need to use that foundation to defeat communism. Unity between America and Christianity is the way to restore the failure of unity between Judaism and the people of Israel. That is why we are using the restoration of the authority of the elder son to persuade Mr. Gorbachev to voluntarily surrender. After Mr. Gorbachev surrenders, next I need to bring Kim Il-sung to voluntarily surrender.

Kim Il-sung is the lord in Satan's world at the time of the Second Advent. That is why he has taken the parental position. North Koreans call him, "Father," and indeed he is in the position of a parent. I put him in the position of a brother to me. That is why I was able to win him over naturally. I was able to restore the authority of the parents because I restored the authority of the elder son, by bringing Kim Il-sung to natural surrender. Now that the authority of the parents is restored, next is the restoration of kingship, which will happen once North and South Korea are unified. We are moving toward that stage.

Then, on the foundation of that kingship, a royal family will emerge on earth. Adam and Eve did not establish their kingship and the right of the royal family, so our responsibility is to march toward that goal. Because the authority of the elder son and the authority of the parent have been restored, and Father can stand victorious before God, Mother could come to the fore and the liberation of women, along with the liberation of men, could be proclaimed. When we say "men" we really mean Father, because all other men are still on the side of Satan. That is why the authority of the king has to be established, and a royal family must take their place. This is what Father has been teaching you up until now. All of this foundation has been prepared. (235-239, 1992.09.20)

The foundation for the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship

Heavenly Father, we have now come to the point in our global ocean enterprise, which we started in 1963, when we anticipate reaching the summit. In all human history, there had never been a son or daughter who was able to embrace and love the sea from the perspective of a true owner. But True Parents appeared, and with this in mind traversed the five oceans in order to fulfill true ownership. For that purpose, in Kodiak, Alaska, which is within the oceanic realm, we conducted the Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages and proclaimed Heavenly Parentism, always placing You at the center. These are events that Unification Church members can never forget. That ceremony and the proclamation that followed was a big leap toward revolutionizing the foundations of world history and resolving the world's chaos. Now here in Kodiak, with today's "Proclamation of the Return of the Oceans to God," we are connecting the realms of the land and sea, so that the Lord of heaven, the Lord of the sea, and the Lord of the land will be joined as one. (324-109, 2000.06.17)

Heavenly Father, having declared the return of the oceans to You, today on June 24, 2000, in Korea, I decided to connect North and South America. Now, from the Korean peninsula to the southernmost part of Asia, I am able to return to You the land, connecting all six continents together. On this day, in the name of True Parents, I proclaim before heaven and earth that by returning the oceans and continents to You, the land and sea that existed in the original Garden of Eden, made according to Your original ideal, have been reconnected before the Parents of Heaven and Earth. (324-268, 2000.06.24)

Heavenly Father, we, True Parents, took a boat out from Jiguido Island, near Jeju Island. While looking at Mt. Halla, we connected the mountains to the plains, beyond Mt. Baekdu and Mt. Everest in the Himalayas. By so doing, we made the final condition to return to You the realms of the ocean and the land, and we have made that proclamation. It was for this purpose that I came to Korea. Here, at Jiguido, representing Jeju Island, I proclaim before You, Heavenly Father, and before the entire universe, all these connections we have made. Please remember this day. Although I could not complete all my plans by June 2000, I established more than 80 percent of the conditions, and through this, You have gained the authority to move all things in the world to the supreme position of victory with absolutely no ties to Satan. It is a victory You had long hoped to achieve, and which You pursued with resolute determination. Upholding this based on True Parents' relational standard, I proclaim that this world will transition into the realm of liberation on the basis of this ceremony, at this hour of returning all things in the cosmos to You. (325-077, 2000.06.29)

On September 26, 2000, we held an event entitled, "Unification Blessing Ceremony for the Registration of the Four-Position Foundation at the Transition of the Three Ages." The title refers to the realm of the Blessing that opens a great transition from the past three ages of human history to a new age of oneness. In this new age, you need to register your four-position foundation in God's kingdom in order to enter the realm of oneness formed by this transition and registration. Indeed, it is the age of transition. Only when

you are registered will you enter the realm of oneness. The realm of oneness created through registration in this age encompasses both the spiritual and physical worlds. The four-position foundation must come first. God's Will, the ideal of creation, is fulfilled through the perfection of the four-position foundation. That perfection is accomplished by loving others and attending God. The four-position foundation takes root in such a place. This is the formula. (333-281, 2000.09.27)

We are treating the greatest saints and the worst murderers equally by giving both the Blessing, so that the spiritual world and physical world can become one and hell can be abolished. All the divisions in the spirit world, such as those between paradise and other realms, must be removed so that all can return to one even level. As part of our earnest efforts to make the Blessing global in scope, I proclaimed at the United Nations that national borders should be dissolved. Therefore, on December 3, which was before the end of the year 2000, I issued a proclamation declaring the abolition of paradise and the opening of registration in the Kingdom of Heaven to all. We as True Parents declared the abolition of paradise and hell because these realms stemmed from the false parents. We made the conditions to liquidate these realms by successfully surmounting the hill of indemnity. If we had not been successful in abolishing paradise and hell, it would be impossible to enthrone God as King. (340-043, 2000.12.23)

Heavenly Father, beginning today, December 1 of this historic year of 2000, we are making preparations to usher in the year marking the beginning of the new millennium. On this day, having surmounted the hill of bitter sorrow in the heavenly and earthly worlds, and having completed the period for resolving everything in history, we will begin to lay the foundation for the perfection of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos centered on love, in order to bring about the ideal world that You envisioned at the creation. We have set the date for this new beginning as January 13, 2001, 43 days from today. We designate this 43-day period as a time to make all the needed preparations to celebrate Your enthronement to the position of the King of all families, the King of all nations, the King of the world and the King of all kings. It will be the day when You can proclaim that liberation has come, because everything has been resolved, including the bitter sorrow You have harbored in Your heart. As we have determined that the day on which we will enthrone You, Father, is 43 days from today, and as we make this proclamation about that day, may You help us step over the realm of death and leap into the world of liberation. We would like to express our gratitude to You for the grace of allowing us to usher in this era when we can establish Your supremacy. We are grateful that we could receive this heavenly fortune based on the family-level Blessings that True Parents needed to spread throughout the world in order to fulfill the ideal of oneness before You, the Father of all humankind. From this day forth, centered on the Original Holy Ground, Root Holy Ground and Victory Holy Ground, please allow us to make all the necessary preparations during these coming 43 days to take this giant step forward for You. (338-311, 2000.12.01)

When the first human ancestors became the false human ancestors, they created hell, overturning God's kingship and everything good. True Parents and the blessed families of the Unification Church need to set things straight and attend God in His rightful position as the true King. With this authority, God will bequeath to True Parents what is needed to recover the ideals of His family, His world and His cosmos. The condition to enable this is the Total Living Offering.

Without making this condition, people cannot claim ownership of anything whatsoever, including their nations. So, without making this condition, anyone who possesses title to anything is in violation. For the absolute God to have the authority of kingship, He should be sovereign over everything, but He lost even love and lineage. How can we attend God in order to see to His enthronement? First, we have to solve the issues of love and lineage. Then we have to enthrone Him with representatives of all nations of the world showing their support. When this happens, God will be able to exercise all His power, His omnipresent authority and power. Thus, hell, Satan's world and Satan's lackeys will be completely cleaned away in an instant. Who will perform the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship? Can True Parents do it alone? We need to do it centered on the registered blessed families. (339-281, 2000.12.22)

Despite undergoing persecution throughout my life, I laid the foundation of victory by going through the eight stages: the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God. Achieving this has liberated God. My last remaining task is to save my enemies. Then the ideal of creation will be fulfilled. Through True Parents, North Korea will be saved, and the conflict between Palestine and Israel will be resolved. The United States does not want to be involved in continual conflicts between Israel and Palestine. However, I have embraced the world of Islam. I have forgiven and saved the United States, although it acted as my enemy by sending me to prison. I embraced everyone who persecuted me; I have no enemies. Not in the realms of Christianity or Islam, not among black people or white people, not even among those in hell do I have an enemy. I stand on the foundation of the unfallen, original family in which all people are brothers and sisters.

In this way we liberated God, and God now has His overall authority. At this point, I am going to recover even His throne. That is why on January 13, 2001, we will enthrone God as the King. The false parent, Satan usurped God's throne. True Parents will recover it and create God's kingdom on earth. It will be a world of peace. True Parents and blessed families now have the privilege of bringing God back to His

throne. Once God is on His throne, when people enter heaven, they will not find any obstacles in their path. Likewise, on earth we should be able to win over the United Nations and eliminate national boundaries to fulfill the standard of world peace, and secure that peace by giving the Blessing to couples from enemy nations. (339-156, 2000.12.10)

On January 13, 2001, True Parents will conduct the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. We are going to bring God back to His throne. That is the ceremony we will carry out. We have already held two ceremonies for this purpose at the formation and growth stages. The coming ceremony will be at the completion stage. We must establish God's kingship. I am proud of the fact that we as human beings could do something that God has not been able to do for Himself. We declared the abolition of hell and paradise, and we dealt with other matters that God has not been able to deal with because Satan destroyed His authority as the king. That is why True Parents need to restore God to His original position and recover for Him the world where He has all authority to exercise His power, being immanent in all and present everywhere. (339-065, 2000.12.06)

Since I declared the abolition of paradise and hell, there is no longer any path of indemnity on the course laid out by True Parents. Now that we are free to build the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven, and now that the fallen archangel is gone, God is now the True God and the True King who can return to His original place on His throne. God could not do this by Himself. The false parent expelled Him from His position; therefore, according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, it has to be the True Parents who bring God back to His throne. If they do not do it, God can never assume the throne.

It is we human beings who must bring God to His throne. That we can now do so is mainly because the Saviors, the True Parents, established their authority to give the Blessing to us on earth and in heaven through God's love, life and lineage. The Blessing empowers us to establish all the new traditions of God's nation. Those who stand in the realm of God's blessing are tied directly to God by bloodline and have no ties with Satan. It was Satan, the false parent of humankind, who turned everything upside down; but now True Parents have removed Satan and abolished hell and paradise, so that now only the Kingdom of Heaven can remain. On this foundation, we shall enthrone God at the center of His kingdom. This is the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. (339-087, 2000.12.07)

Heavenly Father, today, January 1, 2001, the age of the night has ended and we are heading toward the year 3000 in the age of the day. In the name of True Parents, I sincerely desire that we can establish the sovereignty of love under the Great Sovereign of Heaven and Earth. I sincerely desire that we can realize the independence of Your fatherland, where everyone acts based upon a heart of love without reservation, and where everyone has the authority of freedom, both vertically and horizontally. May You guide all people to know the highway we have built to take them straight to heaven, so they can be active and can advance with minds that are free, with minds and bodies united, and with the authority of people who have the autonomy to be family kings and queens, and kings and queens of the nations and the cosmos, while attending the Parents of Heaven and Earth. In the name of True Parents, I proclaim our hope and desire that You will establish Your eternal reign of peace. (341-155, 2001.01.01)

The Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship and the liberation of God

With the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship, we are ushering in the age when God can exercise His authority and power in all immanence and omnipresence. We are advancing toward the age when human beings as autonomous owners can complete the building of God's kingdom on earth, which He has long desired. For this purpose, we have mobilized the spirits in all the religious spheres. Especially since True Parents came with the authority of autonomous owners, we now will welcome the grand age of victory and liberation, when the earthly world and the heavenly realms will march forward in step. Beginning in January 2001, families that received the Blessing on earth and in heaven must unite in heart and establish a firm foundation to take root on earth. To that end, those in the heavenly realms need to inherit the positions of the elder son, the parents, and the kings based on Adam's foundation on earth, and restore to the younger son the authority of the elder son. Through this, we will usher in the revolutionary era when the authority of the younger son can replace the authority of the elder son in heaven and on earth. (342-263, 2001.01.13)

It is of the utmost importance that blessed families protect God's kingship. Your primary responsibility as blessed central families is to guard His kingship. Hence, you should take the greatest pride in having supported the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. Now that God is enthroned, supporting His throne should be your number one aim and your supreme goal in life. You should praise God's sovereignty and testify to it. Resolve to invest everything to uphold it. Remember always that it must be your absolute, sole, unchanging and eternal determination to protect and expand His kingship. You blessed families must protect His kingship throughout your lives. (343-120, 2001.01.21)

You need to carry the absolute sovereignty of God in your hearts. God's sovereignty must be the foremost principle of your lives. This sovereignty begins from one individual, the perfected Adam, and connects to the family, tribe, people, nation and the whole world. Even all creation longs to be connected to the

family of the perfected Adam. You must understand and believe in this principle. You should exalt God's sovereignty more than anything in the world. However, until now, God could not rejoice in His sovereignty, but instead had to undertake the sorrowful and painful task of leading the providence of restoration. In the Last Days, the responsibility of religions, nations, the Messiah and the True Parents is to bring God back to His original position and status. God's exercise of His sovereignty is the central point for redeeming all beings. Until now God was unable to assume His sovereignty, and for that reason, He could not be the absolute, almighty God. Now, however, God has reclaimed His sovereignty. Through the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship, God has become the center of all creation. Even the tiniest, seemingly insignificant creature was created by the one and only God. After the Human Fall, God lost His throne, but now He has been returned to that original position. This was possible thanks to all the families who received the Blessing. Therefore, you should carry with you the concept of God's absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sovereignty. (343-121, 2001.01.21)

Even God must be liberated. He longs for liberation, yet liberation has eluded Him. Why? It is because of Adam and Eve. They followed the false parent and took a path opposite to their original path. So, we must now follow the right path, be liberated, and finally, enthrone God as the King. The false parents turned the cosmos upside down with their false lineage, but I have set it straight. Formerly, sinners were trapped in hell's deep hole, but I filled up that hole. We gave the marriage Blessing not only to saints but also to murderers. We gave the Blessing not only to Unification Church members but also to members of religions that opposed us. We granted them entry into the Unification Realm, the realm of liberation, linking all of them together even with the True Children and all saints (341-016, 2000.12.29)

We, as True Parents, must liberate God. God could not become the Parent of humankind, and we must secure His position as the Parent. Also, God was unable to become the Teacher or the Owner of humankind, so we must secure His positions as the Teacher and the Owner. Further, we must make sure that He can settle on this earth in His hometown, in His fatherland. To this end, we conducted the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. (361-084, 2001.11.20)

Do you think that we as True Parents could hold the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship any way we wanted to? We needed to know about the protocols of God's kingdom and had to carry out the ceremony in the proper manner. Otherwise, we could not have conducted it. The ceremony was held in accordance with the detailed protocols of God's kingdom for an enthronement ceremony. As a result, spirits who had been like prisoners in the spirit world, whose minds and bodies were disunited, were finally liberated. Now they are free to come and go between heaven and earth. (519-291, 2006.03.06)

Only the True Parents can liberate God. Since the false parents ruined everything, it is up to us as True Parents to straighten everything out. We now have completed everything we needed to do. We offered the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. What else is left to do? We have done everything humanly possible on earth. We gave the Blessing to 400 million couples to connect people to God's lineage and create a world in which all people are members of His family. (343-190, 2001.01.29)

Who will take responsibility for the wretched, pitiful history of humankind? No one who remains in ignorance can take responsibility. The person who must take responsibility is the one who knows what to do. The surgeon who holds the scalpel and all the surgical tools in the operating room is the one who must take responsibility for saving his patient's life, even at the risk of exposing himself to a fatal illness. True Parents are like that surgeon. Individuals, families, nations, and heaven and earth are all trapped in hell, in the realm of the Fall. Who will liberate them? The Lord has returned as the True Parents. They established true kingship over the family, tribe, people and nation before finally holding the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship. (418-251, 2003.09.25)

The Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents

Because now all the Cain families of the world are in a position to respond positively to the Abel families, the lineage lost in the Garden of Eden and the fight of the brothers, Cain and Abel is now manifested vertically and to the left and right, and in all four directions. Accordingly, centering on the blessed families, Cain families are brought into unity, the fallen lineage is removed and offered before the original True Parents, and they become one. When they become one, the whole world must change. Therefore, on June 13, 2006, heaven and earth will be turned upside down. When such a reversal occurs, in the original position in the world where True Parents can be perfected, even Satan must proclaim with a heart of great joy that he will reconnect with his duties of devotion, which were lost long ago, and he will be able to attend True Parents again. You must know that only if that happens will the Entrance Ceremony be possible. Until now, neither could the people on this earth be cast away nor could there be a new beginning. The Entrance Ceremony on June 13 will turn everything around and place everything in its proper place. It is the entry point of a new era. (526-027, 2006.05.10)

People who have not married interculturally will not be able to serve in top leadership positions. After entering the Palace, and after the coronation of the good king, the organization will be established centered on the royal line. In the royal lineage, if I am the first generation, who are the second and third

generations? It is not just Koreans. Among women, the Japanese women took the lead, and among men, the Korean men took the lead, but your sons and daughters and the sons and daughters of Korean people who married each other will be partners. The age is coming when you will be able to join the realm of the royal offspring of the heavenly nation, the nobility of the future. (527-065, 2006.05.24)

The gift that a family should offer to God is a family of the original Adam who had not fallen. The Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony is planting the seed of the flower of the ideal, and going over the boundary line of celebrating a new beginning that can blossom. (527-318, 2006.06.01)

Once the King of Peace holds the Entrance Ceremony at Chung Pyung, God will no longer live as a wanderer as He has until now. He will come down, become one with True Father and settle down. Because He is settling down, we are entering a frightening age. We are entering an age of law. There will be no forgiveness. God and Adam must become one body. It is teaching the family and the nation to become one body. Throughout the world for thousands of years there were no ancestors; there were no people. The form of a family that can be perfected has finally taken its place in the empty Kingdom of Heaven and from now on others can match it. The ceremony to connect the king of the earth with God is the "Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents as the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth." (525-098, 2006.04.23)

Through the ceremony called the "Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony and Coronation of True Parents as the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth," we will be able to stand in the position of victorious Abel as the King and Queen of Peace. Henceforth, instead of just following us as True Parents, your work should honor us as attendance. Before, you just followed us, but now the times have changed. As the king and queen, we now represent all creation. Therefore, to continue your relationship with us in our positions as the king and queen, you too must become people who can represent all creation. Only then can you participate in this era as people united with the king and queen. Hence, you can no longer relate with us casually or live your lives carelessly. This era is unfolding at this very time. (524-181, 2006.04.12)

With Your capacity of all transcendence, all immanence and all authority, please settle the sorrowful things of all the past days. Now with the spirit world and earthly world having become one through Your blessing of the family in the original perfection having nothing to do with the Fall, in this unified nation and world we earnestly hope and desire that You will allow us to become sons and daughters who form and take part in the duty of filial piety, and who bring filial piety to perfection. Families that have been blessed are gathered here in one place, together with the True Parents who are at the center of this Entrance Ceremony. We are standing in this place of settlement through oneness in heart, oneness in body, oneness in thought and oneness in harmony. Together with all these proclamations in this place of the cosmic summit of total perfection, with mind and body having once again become one through the formation of an ideal family that can praise and attend the glory of God from the individual to the ends of the cosmos, perfectly freely, at this event of God's transcendence, immanence and authority, from now on, please become the King of love and glory who is able to give continually until connected to the point of the re-creation of heaven and earth. I earnestly report and proclaim that You will become the everlasting Lord of the reign of peace. (528-252, 2006.06.06)

My Father, Master of all heaven and earth, having thus persevered, You have worked to enlighten all the fallen descendants who did not know that You are our Father, the Father of our family, the Father of our nation, our world, and our heaven and earth, by sending the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind to earth, ten, a hundred, a thousand kinds of things have been developed and enlightened and awakened. The cornerstones of this victorious supremacy have been laid so that on the battleground -- everything from the fight between mind and body to the breakdown of the conjugal relationship, the division between father and son, conflict between tribes, conflict between nations, conflict between worlds, and even to the confrontation between the ideology of atheism and our Heavenly Father, who is the master of the universe centered on the great laws of eternity, of the origin, of heaven and earth and the heavenly way which is centered on heaven and earth, and everything that was fighting against God, the eternal, nucleic king of the eternally existing world -- could be resolved. The Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind have come down to earth to pioneer all unknown environments in heaven and on earth, and through the model standard and the Divine Principle they have achieved the liberated realm on the levels of the individual, tribe, ethnic people, nation, world and cosmos. On this victorious signal, they are now standing at a point in time in which they can conduct the Coronation of the King and Queen of Peace in Heaven and on Earth in Cheon Jeong Gung on this day; and standing here, we dedicate before You, our Father, this temple, this palace. (529-239, 2006.06.13)

On behalf of all humanity, and as the representative of all saints, sages and ancestors in heaven, the foundation of the kingship of the Savior, Messiah, Lord at his Second Coming and the True Parents, who are working at the ultimate end to accomplish and clear away everything, is being presented and dedicated on the foundation of perfection. So, Father, with the authority of the master of all eternity, and with the joy of liberation and complete inner freedom great enough to more than completely do away with the sad history of the imperfect place that is Eden, and with the authority of the eternal master and eternal

emperor of love governing over all creation, we dedicate all this before You at this time so that You may become the ruler and master forever and ever more, and so that the True Parents can become the flowers and the fruits in the realm of life of all creation in the world. Heavenly Father, we dedicate and offer this to You earnestly and ardently from the bottom of our hearts, and we pray that You may accept it with delight. I present and report this solemnly in the name of True Parents! (529-240, 2006.06.13)

How did we approach the matter of God's throne in the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance and Coronation Ceremony? When we held the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship in the past, we set up thrones for God. We placed chairs as the seat for God, but this time there were no chairs. We had seats for the Entrance Ceremony, but at this Coronation Ceremony, God and True Parents had become one. They were connected vertically. The vertical God comes down to a single point. Because I was seated at that one point, the internal and external correspond. Before the ceremony, spirits came urgently from the spirit world and prepared it this way. (529-273, 2006.06.14)

From the day of the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony, True Father cannot bow before the invisible God, even in the spirit world. That which became the real center is the realization of the purpose of creation, and when it is fulfilled, God enters. In the future, for even greater issues, even if we do not pray things will be resolved, because God will automatically guide us. Therefore, from now on, I will not resolve matters alone. Having become one body, we must go forward under God's guidance. (537-197, 2006.09.01)

When the Third Adam comes, fulfills the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages and enters into the liberated world based on the heart of the Fourth Adam, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven will become one. God will no longer need to seek out the era of Adam based on His hope for the Lord at the Second Advent. Instead, for the first time, the returning Lord will attend God in the position of the victor and will open the paths that formerly were blocked by the false parent. By bringing about the era of settlement, the age of total liberation and complete freedom will come to pass. God is the origin of love, life and lineage. Thus, you must become the substantial fruit of the lineage that arose from God the Origin's love and life. If you are one in heart with True Parents based on a strong bond of unity with them, you should be able to overcome any situation and still remain strong. Then you will come to stand in a position where God can come to you and relate directly with you. (573-034, 2007.08.20)

Mother must complete the responsibility of being able to teach about the family ideal. You must know that Mother's calling to that responsibility is important. If Father's responsibility is to liberate all people by uncovering the secrets of heaven and earth and building a direct highway that can go to the Kingdom of Heaven, beyond that, by raising her son, Mother has finally met her husband who was cast out of Eden. Now you have received the Blessing, but because you don't have a nation, you could not be entered in a family register, and could not be registered. This has been delayed for 40 years. Because of that, wherever you go you receive persecution, and wherever you go you are treated contemptuously. It was this way, but now, here, Cheon Jeong Gung has come into existence. Aju! And the owner has a house he can live in. Even if we pray, we are not asking for something. Now we do not need prayer. All that is left to do is practice. (538267, 2006.09.16)

Chapter 2: The Proclamation of Cheon Il Guk and the Declaration of the Ultimate Unity of True Parents

The proclamation of Cheon Il Guk and its significance

Have you ever heard of the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity? Have you ever heard that there is a nation of God? I'm asking whether you have heard about heaven on earth, the ideal world and the utopia for which God longs. No one has ever heard these words before, but everyone longs for such a nation. It is not an illusion, it is reality. Men and women, young and old, regardless of background, place and time, whether living in the physical world or the spiritual world, will all agree that the nation of peace, the nation longed for by God, is nothing other than the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity, Cheon Il Guk. Who can bring this nation to fruition? God created us as His sons and daughters. Thus, we are the ones who are responsible to realize this nation. When this is done, the country will belong not only to God but also to His sons and daughters. It will be a nation that the sons and daughters can be proud of for eternity with God at its center. It is also the ideal nation of God's dream. In that nation, the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world can truly be happy. (359-080, 2001.11.06)

Before we die, we must unite our mind and body. The wife must come to love God more than she loves her husband, and the husband must love God more than he loves his wife. You must also become a family that can love God's sons and daughters just as God loves them. Families like that come together to form a tribe and such tribes come together to form a nation. Then these nations come together to form the world, and the physical and spiritual worlds unite to form heaven and earth, the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity. God will be the ruler of that nation, we will be His subjects, and the whole world will be its territory. (357-195, 2001.10.30)

All of you need to enter the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity. This nation has no ties to Satan. All ties with Satan must be cut off, and you have to stand in the position of a messiah. You must stand in the position of individual, family, tribal and national messiah. To live in this liberated heavenly nation, mind and body need to become one. Through achieving such oneness in heart, the new cosmic nation on earth, the nation of Cheon Il Guk, becomes my nation. After the nation of the individual, there is the nation of the husband and wife. In this nation, husband and wife need to become one based on their mind and body having become one. You as an individual must be united, and you and your spouse have to be united. This is the distinctive standard by which you can represent the perfected Blessing. This distinctive standard is the realm of the Blessing that encompasses both parent and child. It is the realm of the Blessing of heaven and of earth. (360-266, 2001.11.17)

The Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity is not a nation meant solely for the Korean people. It is God's desire to liberate all humankind, including hundreds of billions of ancestors in the spirit world, and even the world of angels. Therefore, even though the road that leads to this is arduous and miserable, we must travel it. We must invest with the heart of a parent, of a husband or wife, of an elder sibling or a younger sibling who has lost the person they love the most. We must go forward, investing and forgetting that we have invested. Whoever lives like this, even if someone tells them not to, will naturally end up in heaven. (358-062, 2001.11.01)

Now, all I have to do is organize a movement that can establish a new family, a new tribe and a new nation. If I am able to accomplish this, not only Korea but also the United Nations and the whole world will come to follow me and understand the direction they need to take. The formation of the new family, a family that Satan has not defiled, starts with True Parents. The mission that remains is to expand the sanctified, unfallen nation. This is re-creation. God cannot give His love where traces of Satan's filthy love remain. You must fulfill your mission. Only then can you go to the heavenly nation and restore your honor as the perfected descendant of Adam. The Israelites went through the 40-year wilderness course but could not build the homeland. However, I have lived through the 40-year wilderness course on the worldwide level and have re-created the people of Israel, making it possible to build the world-level kingdom. (268-120, 1995.03.31)

Moses was 80 years old when he sought the hometown and nation in preparation for the age of Jesus. The failures that came about then are being restored centering on the blessed families. That is why there was a 40-year course to restore Canaan centering on the blessed families. It refers to the period when heaven and earth are to become one. In the blessed families' course of establishing Canaan, heaven and earth were turned upside down. To create one people, I had the blessed families unite with one another in Jardim, Brazil. Now that they have become one, doing the work to settle with one mind and one body, even with heaven and earth upside down, they will be able to return to Canaan without any resistance. Because they have completed these preparations, they are passing over the boundary line and landing in a new dimension. Moses sought the hometown and nation on the level of a people. He was unable to accomplish that. But today, on my 80th birthday, I have overcome all impediments and realized the completion of the ideal family and the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. (314-266, 2000.01.09)

Christianity did not unite after World War II and, centered on the United States, even went so far as to chase me away. We came to be just like the Israelites, cast out into the wilderness for 40 years. Centering on the 4,300 years of Korean history, the course to establish Canaan and to complete the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven was prolonged. To finish this, the First, Second and Third Israels and the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages must be brought to a conclusion. Cheon Il Guk can begin only if this is completed and it stands on the foundation of settlement. (428-152, 2003.12.18)

The term Cheon Il Guk came into existence thanks to True Parents. After we successfully completed God's Kingship, we passed through the Settlement Age in the Realm of Life of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and then held the gatherings for the Harmony and Unity of Heaven and Earth and finally the Ascension (Seonghwa) Ceremonies for Peace, Unification and the Liberation of Heaven and Earth. When these were completed, a new nation was necessary. True Parents declared Cheon Il Guk. The goal of the Family Pledge is to complete Cheon Il Guk. We must fulfill the Family Pledge for the sake of our mothers, our fathers, our siblings, our nation, our world, and the saints and sages and the entire heavenly world. The conclusion is simple. Why did we hold the Enthronement Ceremony for God's Kingship? We did it for Cheon Il Guk. Why did we hold the rallies for the Settlement in the Realm of Life of the Parents of Heaven and Earth? We did it so that the citizens of Cheon Il Guk can settle and live there. Right now, all citizens of heaven and earth are making a resolution. Together they are setting conditions for a united world from the level of the individual resolution through all eight stages. On the worldwide level they are making resolutions to achieve success, focusing on a common purpose. (396-149, 2002.11.05)

You promised the people of Israel You would send the Messiah in order to realize the one nation that transcends religions, politics, nations, NGOs and the world. Therefore, the Messiah came to earth as the perfected man to establish the standard for Eve, lost due to the failure of Adam's family, and thus go

beyond the foundations of family and people and establish the victory on the national level. He is to ultimately restore God's sovereignty of love, which was Your ideal in Eden, yet Your plans had fallen down into the world of darkness. However, the Messiah began to work again, all alone in the darkness of the night, to rise from the position of servant of servant to the position of servant, to the position of adopted son, to the position of illegitimate son, and finally to the position of son, and thus he was able to find and establish Mother and, with her, assume the position of the Parents. Moreover, we know that it is the mission of Mother, in the role of Eve, to bring the Cain-and Abel-type worlds of communism and democracy under control and dedicate them to the True Parent, the original Father.

Centering on this mission of Eve, Mother has once again gone through the act of giving birth in order to surmount and overcome the worldwide limitations of today, by fighting against the sovereignty of the satanic realm that destroys the free environment of the entire democratic world, and by subjugating the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. By so doing, she has become the perfected mother in substantial form who has triumphed on this earth and in heaven, and now the gates of Cheon Il Guk have been opened where we can inherit the kingship of the heavenly kingdom.

By opening the gates of Cheon Il Guk, the grounds for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven have been prepared, and the name of the liberated realm has been restored once again, the realm where the true families of true love, true life and true lineage, who follow the ideal of love of oneness in heart, oneness in body, oneness in thought and oneness in harmony, can settle down. Thus, we have been enabled to hold this ceremony through which the world of lamentation filled with bitter sorrow can be eliminated, and we can once again recover and establish the victorious sovereignty of love in the hopeful future and dedicate it to Heaven. So, thank You, thank You, thank You for allowing us to do so. (404-290, 2003.02.06)

We must dedicate the nation to Father. That is the path that all nations in the world must follow. Therefore, they need to be registered as the new Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity. We have entered such an age. If Satan's world goes against it and doesn't adjust itself to it, it will continue to crumble away. When you look at the nations of today, you can see that there are no owners of the nations. America itself does not have an owner, and neither does any other nation. The entire world is in chaos and does not know which direction to go in, so we should take this opportunity and help it settle down. It needs to be newly organized in the form of a nation that is like the expansion of an ideal family. (360-121, 2001.11.15)

From now on, if you are asked which country you are from, you should say you are from the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity. We have abbreviated the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity to "Cheon Il Guk." Cheon Il Guk! The term "Cheon Il" means that there is only one in the entire universe. Two people come together as one to form the one nation. Your mind and body are also like two people, aren't they? Unless they are united, you cannot become a citizen of Cheon Il Guk. (360-086, 2001.11.12)

The world must carry out the movement for the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity. The word "cosmic" includes all such terms as peace and unity. The problem is unity. There is no center. When you abbreviate it, it becomes Cheon Il Guk. It is the one nation of Heaven. We need to carry out this movement worldwide. It should be proclaimed. (360-112, 2001.11.14)

In the name Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity, the word "cosmic" in Korean is cheonju, and cheon (天) meaning heaven refers to two people standing in a parallel line. The word "peace" in Korean includes pyeong (平), in which a cross (十) can be seen. It fully connects heaven and earth. This part, (人) refers to two people. Accordingly, in the term cheonju, the concept of peace is already incorporated. Then what will the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity be called in the future? it is "Cheon Il Guk." It is the one nation most beloved and desired by God. It is the Cosmic Nation of Peace and Unity, and the name Cheon Il Guk is the abbreviated form. It is the one and only nation most beloved by God, the one and only nation most beloved by our family, the one and only nation most beloved by our clan, and the one and only nation most beloved by all of us, Caucasians, Africans and Asians alike. One of its meanings is that the Kingdom of Heaven can only be realized when two people unite as one. (360-167, 2001.11.15)

Cheon Il Guk is the "heaven-one-nation," the nation where two people live together in oneness. Putting two people together is not enough to make a family. There have to be at least three. No matter how happy two people are as a married couple, that is not a family. You need your children, the expansion of the family, and you need that to expand into a nation. Then the nation should expand to reach the cosmos. When you go to the spirit world, you will live in an extended family with God at the center. It will be a very big family. This means that, in order to build the Kingdom of Heaven, families are needed. The basic unit is the family. The family expands to a tribe, a people, a nation and the world, but the basic unit remains the same. The unit at the heart of the family, the nation and the world are all the same. They all work on the same formula. When we expand the formula of the family we live in to a larger scale it becomes the formula for the nation, the formula for the cosmos. (361-137, 2001.11.22)

Cheonju (天宙), cosmos, means "Heaven's house." It means the house of two people. Pyeonghwa (peace) means pyeong (平), equal or flat, whether you are in heaven or on earth. This means peace must be flat. If it is at just a little bit of an angle, you will run into it. If it is not parallel, you will run into it and the tradition of peace that has survived for ten years or even 100 years will be cut off and finished. We must not let this happen. We need to be two people who are at peace. Mind and body are also like two people. A husband and wife are two people. Two parents, two children; two people, two more people; then four people have to become parallel, and they will be a heavenly family, a parallel family with parents at the center. You must become this kind of family. Do not be a family that runs into each other. You cannot fight. Two must become one. (364-114, 2002.01.01)

The character cheon (天), "heave," symbolizes two (二) people (人). The character for "two" (二) consists of a horizontal line on top and a horizontal line on the bottom. Peace should be created in both the spirit world and the earthly world. I included the words "cosmos" and "peace" in this motto; thus, it includes the meaning, "cosmic peace." Also, Cheon Il Guk has the horizontal character il (一) meaning "one" or "unity." Accordingly, the motto of 2001 included the meaning "two people fulfill the Will with true love, whose subject nature is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal." Without true love we cannot accomplish the Will. That is why I included "absolute, unique, unchanging, eternal love" as the way to fulfill the Will. We must fulfill it with absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love. That is Cheon Il Guk, the nation where two people become one. The word "cosmos" means our home in heaven and on earth. Man and woman create balance on the horizontal plane and attend Heaven. Centering on Heaven whom the man and woman attend, they should each unite their mind and body and then unite as husband and wife. Next, they should unite as parents and children, and at the same time they should unite with their brothers and sisters and with others whom they should treat as brothers and sisters. In each case it is like two people uniting with each other. These realms of subject partner and object partner can be established only with true love. True love is the center. It is the center of the individual and the center of the couple. Then it expands to higher levels as the center of parents and children and the center of sibling relationships in the family and in the world. In this way, the family can be settled. Once the family is settled, then its tribe should unite based on that family so that they become one. Then the entirety of the people should unite based on that tribe, so that they become one. Then the nation should unite based on that people, so that they become one. We must have a unified nation for the world to unite with, and a unified world such that the cosmos will unite with it, and then a unified cosmos that will connect with God. If you live like that, wherever you go horizontally or vertically, you will not collide with anything. (364-071, 2002.01.01)

The proclamation of Foundation Day

As True Parents, on October 3, 2001, which was 13 years after the Foundation Day for the Nation of the Unified World, we examined our lives, and things were on track. The year 2001 launched us toward the year 3000. If we calculate 3,000 years each for a man and a woman, that makes 6,000. I must complete in just 13 years the responsibility that all men and women ought to have accomplished throughout the 6,000 biblical years of history. Within 13 years, I have to complete everything that Adam was unable to fulfill. I have to seek out the lineage that Satan stole from God. The 13th day of the 1st month in 2013 is our D-Day. I will wipe everything clean during just these 13 years. (2010.02.01, Cheon Jeong Gung)

The fallen world is not a world of O's (representing right) but of X's (representing wrong). Within a world of X's, there is no space for O's, but even one O can embrace millions of X's. The 13th day of the 1st month in 2013 is to be the D-Day proclaimed by Heaven. What must we accomplish before this D-Day? We must offer to Heaven all the things that Satan stole. How can we gather and return all these things? Even God cannot complete this task by Himself. This is why True Parents have taken it on. Satan became the false parent, false owner and false king, spreading his false lineage. This is why no one knows about God or the spirit world. We are living without truly knowing our starting point, our root; no one truly knows where they are heading. For certain, that which we call the result, which comes from the Origin, defines the one path along which we must go. There are not two paths. There is only one. (611-046, 2009.05.05)

There is a new providence for Heaven until Foundation Day. We must resolve all issues surrounding the ideal of heaven and the ideal of liberation, according to God's wishes. We must complete all our educational efforts in our providential and worldly missions during this time before entering the era of one world. Starting from today, January 19, 2010, and centering on God, we must bring to fruition all our programs and resolve all issues, including those of Cain and Abel and those relating to Satan's lineage. To enter the world of liberation, we need to complete all the education Heaven wishes to see done. Centering on D-Day, we must dedicate ourselves to finishing that work. We need to resolve United Nations issues, national issues and all related issues. To complete God's agenda, all people gathered here today must make a determination and labor to fulfill it. If you work hard, the world will not fall into ruin. My challenge now is to tie up the loose ends and bring the providence to a conclusion. (2010.01.19, Cheon Hwa Gung)

God cannot rest in ultimate perfection with only an incorporeal body. The Parents of Heaven and Earth, who are the substance of the incorporeal God, need to become the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. However, there has been no perfect couple on earth able to fulfill this role for God. Adam and Eve were unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility. Because there were no Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, there was no one who had met the standard to be called True Parents. The ideal of True Parents remained unrealized.

When the Parents of Heaven and Earth unite in conjugal love, they will make a home where God can dwell peacefully. In their home untouched by the Fall, they will realize absolute sex. Now that I have reached the level of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind, I am speaking more freely about absolute sex. When I speak about absolute sex, I am not referring to self-centered, individualistic sex. Half of humanity consists of women, but they are only one of the two sexes that must be harmonized. If there is disharmony between the two, it is as if one's eyes don't look in the same direction, or one's nose is out of place, or the limbs are not coordinated with each other. A woman and a man who have reached perfection must harmonize and become totally one. Marriage signifies the total oneness of man and woman as one body.

For the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth to come about, we must pass through the first era, that of Adam, the second era, that of Jesus, the third era, that of the returning Lord, and the fourth era, that of the realm of Adam's heart. There must be a foundation of harmony. One can fulfill the Blessing when one is in harmony with one's partner and there is no conflict. By the 13th day of the 1st month in 2013, which is D-Day, we must enter through the great door, centering on the Blessing. (610-012, 2009.04.10)

Foundation Day is not something that just anyone can declare. Not even God can do that. It can only be done after True Parents come to earth and bring into unity all that has been divided internally and externally, and dedicate them to Him. (2011.07.28, North Garden)

Foundation Day is the Foundation Day of heaven and earth, and at the same time, also of God. There cannot be a Foundation Day without God. I cannot bring it about all by myself, no matter how hard I try. Once that foundation has been laid, Foundation Day must come, no matter how hard it tries not to. Preparations for it have been made from a long time ago. This is not something that just happened a year ago. The number of years it would take until Foundation Day was already set decades ago. (2011.09.15, Cheon Jeong Gung)

The declaration of True Parents' ultimate unity

My motto in life is, "How can I live today with more gratitude than yesterday?" I have tried to live a life in which I am more grateful today than I was yesterday, and in which I will be even more grateful tomorrow than I am today. It has been my life's goal to have gratitude in my heart every day. Right before I left for Danbury, I said, "Please never complain. You should be grateful for the position you have been placed in, for when you become completely one through your gratitude, great miracles can take place." (2010.07.08, Cheon Jeong Gung)

God has been leading the providence of salvation not just for one generation, but for thousands of years. Biblically speaking, God has been working in history for the restoration of humankind for 6,000 years. Four thousand years is the amount of time that the history of restoration was centered on the chosen people of Israel, which did not fully succeed. That period is what I had to restore through indemnity during the past 40 years. I have given Mother all the fortune I accumulated throughout my life. She, in turn, had to live her life accepting that I, her husband, am also her grandfather, her father and her older brother. She has actually lived her life with that standard. This is what makes Mother so wonderful. (256-219, 1994.03.13)

The 15th day of the 5th lunar month in 2010 was an important date. On that day Mother and I together made a final declaration. At that time, Mother and I came to an agreement on matters about Korea and other matters pertaining to policies. That was when Mother promised that she would unite with me regardless of what happened. Based on her promise, we made our declaration. Amid the final battle with the fallen world, Mother and I made a solemn promise centering on God; that event took place at 3:25 a.m. on the 15th day of the 5th month in 2010 by the heavenly calendar. The hour of that proclamation is significant: three represents the three ages of the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament. In particular, it signifies that this is the third age, the Completed Testament Age, which must never fail. Thus, we stated, "As we welcome the age for the completion, conclusion and closure of the Old, New and Completed Testaments, we offer and declare the age in which the ultimate realm of oneness between True Father and True Mother is perfected and consummated, and the age in which God is all-immanent, all-transcendent, all-powerful and all-capable." (2010.07.01, Cheong Hae Garden)

Oh, Father, every being in heaven and on earth is totally focused on this day, December 11, 2011. On this day, True Parents perfected, finalized and consummated the original standard of the Creator. Now, Father,

You have become the Owner of earth. Now heaven and earth, Father and children, and the family and the world can be totally liberated and enter the state of complete freedom. Accordingly, this is the day to proclaim the perfection, conclusion and consummation of Your victory as the True Parent of the Cosmos, and Your victorious supremacy in the world according to the ideal of creation. Mansei to God! Mansei to True Parents! Father, as the prince who brought You victory by enabling the family kingdom to come by establishing the realm of total oneness between the True God and True Parents, I have accomplished everything that You asked me to fulfill. Based on all these victories, I proclaim that Your sovereignty is now secured. On this morning we, the Parents of Heaven and Earth who have become one, thank You for giving us this chance to proclaim that everything is perfected, liberated and concluded. Aju! (2011.12.11, Cheon Jeong Gung)

What is ultimate unity? When True Parents achieve ultimate unity, perfection, completion and conclusion take place. As one, they can realize perfection, completion and conclusion. Then the providence or anything else would not matter. Standing on the foundation of perfection, completion and conclusion they had attained as one, they will open the age of total, overall and absolute authority and power. (2011.12.09, Cheon Jeong Gung)

Through the realization of their Holy Wedding, True Parents stood in the position of having perfected everything and thus dedicated the age of total, overall and absolute authority and power. They overturned the Fall caused by the false parents, and once again dedicated and declared the age of total, overall and absolute authority and power. They overcame the results of the Fall and perfected everything; and, standing on the standard of completion and conclusion, they have dedicated and declared the age of total, overall and absolute authority and power. They have found and completed the original standard, which was not lost in the Garden of Eden, and they proclaimed it in front of heaven and earth. (2011.06.15, King Garden, Hawaii)

Everything in the providence of restoration has been completed. This means that God has now moved up to the parental position spiritually and physically. Through our restoration of the era of indemnity, True Mother emerged. The ideal of creation was completed both spiritually in heaven and physically on earth, so it became possible to perform True Parents' Holy Wedding and institute registration. Then the blessing of men and women in marriage and the registration of births also became possible on earth. When the ideal of creation was not yet complete, the spiritual Second Advent could not take place, but now True Mother has emerged. The physical True Parents stand in the parental position in the spirit world beginning when True Parents enter heaven. God then becomes the Parent of the mind, and True Parents become the Parents of the body. Also, after True Parents enter heaven as the incarnation of God, all their sons and daughters can enter in their wake. (414-271, 2003.08.04)

The sons and daughters who are born only know True Mother and True Father. That is why it is recorded in the Bible, "No one can enter the Kingdom of God without being born of the Holy Spirit." It also says, "Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven." Why is this so? The fate of human beings is such that we cannot help but return to our mother's womb. If we deny the Holy Spirit, the foundation of our existence will eternally disappear. (240-155, 1992.12.11)

The Holy Spirit is the motherly manifestation of God. You must be moved by this Mother God. Since everything was lost due to Eve's wrongdoing, the perfected Mother God must purify your body and mind so that you can experience becoming spiritually one with the perfected father. Without going through such an experience, there is no way for you to be reborn. It has been said that the sin of disobedience to the Holy Spirit cannot be forgiven, that, although you may be forgiven for speaking against the Heavenly Father and the Son of Man, those who speak against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. Is there anyone who can be born without passing through their mother's womb? In today's Christianity, the Holy Spirit is described using all kinds of metaphors, that she is like the light or water, but the Holy Spirit is actually the Mother God. She must give rebirth. Since human beings have been giving birth wrongly through false love, she must give birth again through true love. Based on this viewpoint, the Unification Church uses the term "True Parents" to represent the position from which all secrets of the universe are revealed, centering on the contents of the Divine Principle. Without going through True Father and True Mother, you cannot become true sons and daughters. This is heavenly law. (245-027, 1993.02.28)

It is the age of True Parents and rebirth. What remains to be done now is for Cain and Abel to enter their mother's womb. That is why you must love Mother. You must weep because you miss her. In the past, you wept because you missed me, but this was due to the fact that it was the age where you stood in the position of the bride in the place of Mother. Now we are entering the age of children, so you should miss Mother.

You must cry tears because you miss Mother offer devotion for her, and be in a position where your relationship with her is better than the mother-child relationships in the secular world. Otherwise, you cannot stand in the position where you can enter Mother's womb and return to God's side. Only when you can go beyond the standard of heart for mothers and fathers in the satanic world and rise higher than the

fallen realm can God concern Himself with you. That is why Jesus said that people should love him more than anyone else.

You must be moved by the Holy Spirit. You can disobey God and the Son of Man, but if you disobey the Holy Spirit, you will not be forgiven. Even if the father is dead, if his seed has already been planted in the mother's womb, it can continue to grow as long as she is there. Every being is born through their mother's womb, and they are supposed to esteem their mother before they start esteeming their father. When something joyous and wonderful happens, sons and daughters come to their mother first. The sons and daughters on Heaven's side who absolutely obey the words of their mother will also obey the words of their father and God. (251-228, 1993.10.17)

From now on, I plan to let the women lead the way in many of our projects. Since Mother has been established to lead the way, you should absolutely obey her words. Even if you failed to obey me, you must obey her. Otherwise, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. If you go against the Holy Spirit, you cannot be saved. You cannot be born. (279-272, 1996.09.22)

You are the sons and daughters of True Mother, the woman who represents the world. Especially you women who follow Mother, you should become Mother's second selves. You should love her more than you do your own husbands. Mother is the Holy Spirit. The Bible teaches that if you betray the Holy Spirit, you cannot be forgiven. There is no way for you to be reborn. Even though she wants to forgive you, you have no basis upon which to be forgiven. Mother is the one who resurrects your life. She gives you rebirth and then she blesses you. (233-087, 1992.07.30)

Only when you are reborn through True Parents can you become the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. Then how are you to be reborn? A condition must be set for your rebirth. You must become one completely. That is why women must absolutely obey the directions of True Mother. By so doing, they need to resolve the bitter sorrow of God's commandments having been disobeyed in the Garden of Eden. They must obey absolutely. And the sons and daughters must obey the words of their mother absolutely. I am teaching you this as the father, the perfected Adam. (237-301, 1992.11.17)

Chapter 3: We Are Grateful for True Mother

True Mother gave birth to 14 children

Mother gave birth to many children. But she is still healthy, for which I am grateful. Ji Go (至高) means to become the greatest mother of the universe. You are implying that when you greet us with, "True Parents, we are so grateful to you!" (601-316, 2008.11.10)

Why is there morning sickness? It occurs though it is not wanted. It is an act by which the mother can assemble all the elements that she should give to her baby, in accordance with the baby's character. It is something to be thankful for. When you think about it, you should be grateful for all such things. You should think, "What kind of a child will I be gifted with, after going through such hardships? Such an environment has been created because a precious gift is coming to our home." Regardless of how much or how little one may have, the more the mother and father do things for their baby, the better it is for the unborn child. The mother should raise her sons and daughters well so that they can become the cornerstones in their father's clan. In building a brick house, it is the responsibility of the mother to raise her son well so that the brick house can be built as quickly as possible. It is the same as bringing in the harvest from the fields to the storehouse, so that the family who lives in the house and other family members can rejoice at the sight of all the piled-up grains. You harvest the best fruits and bring them to the father's presence. My wife suffered many hardships as she gave birth to and raised 13 children. (358-050, 2001.11.01)

Mother needed to give birth to at least 12 children within a span of 20 years in order to completely restore Jacob's family through paying indemnity. Jesus' 12 disciples could not unite with each other. What did they do? They abandoned Jesus, and one of them ended up selling him. Why did this happen? One problem was that despite their brotherly ties, the disciples were from different tribes. There was a problem in Jacob's family because he had sons and daughters born from four different women. In my time, in order to overcome that problem Mother gave birth to at least 12 children within a 20-year time period. Had she not succeeded in this, she could not have fulfilled her mission as True Mother. From this point of view, you can see that no one more than 20 years old could have fulfilled the position of True Mother. She had to be at most 18 or 19 years old. That is why at the age of 40 I married Mother who was just 17 years old. Just as I embarked on the path for the Will at the age of 16, a woman had to meet that standard at around the same age. Otherwise, she would have no way to bring about the liberation of women. (247-255, 1993.05.09)

It was necessary for me to have 12 sons and daughters in my direct lineage. That is why I am so grateful to Mother. She gave birth to 13 children in twenty years. This can be connected internally and externally. The one who can connect all 12 is the eldest son. It is my eldest son. You call Hyo Jin "elder brother" and

Ye Jin "elder sister." but you do not understand why that is. You need to unite with my sons and daughters, even more than with your own mother and father. This is because the eldest son and the second son must unite. When your own mother and father gave birth to you, they did not pass through the path of the original parents. In all respects, you were born of a different lineage. This is where the Cain-type and Abel-type come from. The eldest son has already been born on this earth. That is a blessing. You have received the Blessing and set the condition of having walked the path of indemnity, so you were born as the second son. You are in the position of the second son. Since your position is such that you can just follow in the footsteps of the eldest son, it is a blessing for you. (120-331, 1982.10.20)

Mother became pregnant more than 18 times. She gave birth to 14 and miscarried the others. She lost the babies because she was exhausted and overworked. I know all about her history. She was unable to go to the hospital when she gave birth to the first four babies. Would there have been an obstetrician's office in the Garden of Eden where the wife can give birth? You have no idea how much she suffered when she gave birth to Heung Jin. It was almost as if she had given birth to a dead baby. I can still remember how much commotion there was to save that baby. (441-115, 2004.03.03)

Mother had to suffer until she had given birth to the number of children she must have. Mother gave birth to 14 children. How much she must have suffered! I had to travel the world, so I sometimes did not know that she had given birth while I was away. When Young Jin was born, I was in Germany. His birth was very difficult for Mother because his head was big. Many times I could not watch over her as she gave birth to our sons and daughters. I was too busy creating a world for blessed families. (500-239, 2005.07.12)

We are grateful for True Mother

I am grateful to Mother for believing in me. I am happy to have Mother, who can sleep with a sense of security even when she has to sleep alone late at night, or early in the morning because I come home late. If we had been a couple in the secular world, we would have done more than fought about it. We would have split up in less than a month. (459-053, 2004.07.10)

The wonderful thing about Mother is that she believes everything I tell her. She is truly great because she absolutely believes in me, and tries to obey my words absolutely. Though hers was a position opposed by many women, she was more than equal to it, and she assumed the position of the daughter who believes in her father. Since this is the course of restoration, she must be able to say that she will take full responsibility as the daughter, even if her father has flaws. Only then can Eve uproot the roots of sin. (325-170, 2000.07.01)

Who is more wonderful, Mother or me? I am the planter, and she is the one who receives the seed and raises it. What should be done when it is all grown? My wife and I are working to become the farmland that can be loved by God, so that He will be able to say that He wants to share every delicious meal with us in all seasons of spring, summer, fall and winter. In short, He will wish to share in the life led by His son for the first time ever. (565-024, 2007.06.05)

The great thing about Mother is that she knows when to endure and when to do something, no matter what I may do. I have a fiery temper. If someone does something wrong, even a little bit wrong, I thunder at them. (227-248, 1992.02.14)

Do you know how much effort Mother made and how many indescribable hardships she went through stay by my side? You should praise her for her hard work. She had to be so careful in attending her great husband, didn't she? She has to be careful even in saying a word. She has no freedom. She is always on edge, almost as if she is walking on thin ice, and wonders every day, "Will I be comfortable today? Will I be comfortable tomorrow?"; and yet, she has lived each day with gratitude toward God. I know all about that. I do not scold her. She just kept up with me, and she ended up becoming the holy mother. (202-228, 1990.05.24)

Mother is to be pitied. She has no time to rest. Today, I brought her here even though she was feeling dizzy because she got less than two hours of sleep last night. I said to her, "You are a public figure. You cannot sleep when you feel dizzy. You must go even if you don't want to, because you must set a good example." Mother understood that very well. I am a strict person. I am a strict person, with no leniency when it comes to public events. My character is such that I show no mercy for any reason, even if someone is on the verge of death. Of course, that does not mean that Mother is so weak that she will collapse. (100-309, 1978.10.22)

Mother suffered much as she accompanied me here and there. She has had to go through all kinds of hardships in holding the international assemblies and other events, and she has seen all kinds of things. Her speaking tour of 40 universities was nothing. She was at the very center of the fight. She had to do all manner of things. Therefore, she is not swayed by anything she might see in the world. Mother has undergone many difficulties since marrying me. I am grateful to her for absolutely obeying all my

directions. That is the way things have been from the moment of our wedding. (252-115, 1993.11.14)

The gratitude in Mother's heart grows with each day. That is why she says to me, "Father, thank you." I think of her as a daughter, because she calls me "Father!" I also call her "Mother!" I become like a child in front of her. That is the best model for a couple in the Unification Church, which should never disappear even in the far future, and should also be the model of all true parents, parents who should be adored by all peoples. When you adore such a couple, you will inevitably become like the shadows of that couple you respect. When those shadows grow denser, they will become substantial, and the aged True Parents will move on to the spirit world. (257-323, 1994.03.16)

Why is Father a happy man? When Father's hair is too long, he comes to Mother and she gives him a haircut immediately. When he feels that his fingernails are too long, he goes to her and she clips his fingernails or toenails. Whatever Father wants she does for him voluntarily, without a word of complaint.

Don't you think that Father is a happy man? Even in the bathtub, Mother is scrubbing Father's back. Mother always loves and cares about Father just as any other woman in the world would take care of her husband. That is the beauty of love. It is like art. That's what makes Father feel happy all the time. This is the art of living a loving life together.

When Mother cares about Father in such a way, she feels as though Father is her eldest son. As our sons watch Mother care for Father, they develop a desire to receive the same kind of care from her. When their parents come home from a long journey, all run to Mother hoping for her loving care. Now Mother has 14 children all longing for this caring love. Mother clips Father's nails at least once a week. She keeps all the necessary grooming implements neatly arranged in her drawer. Mother takes care of Father with external love, so Father gives Mother internal love in return.

On the night before a journey, Mother stays up all night to prepare my things so that I will not want for anything. Should Father go before her, or after her? Since Adam was born first, he should go first, too. However, I hope that I might stay as long as I can before I have to go, even if it is for an extra day or two. What do you think I feel when I see True Mother offering devotion for me? I cannot live twenty-three years longer than Mother. Knowing that, Mother is making preparations for living twenty-three more years, after which we will go on our travels together as companions. Since I will have so much to do and so many little things to prepare when I go to the spirit world, Mother is making preparations every day, staying up all night with bloodshot eyes so that I can get some rest. Whenever I see that, I feel so grateful to her. (599-089, 2008.09.25)

Could a man who lives with Mother be unhappy? He is happy. That is why I have taken a mental picture of her face in her twenties, so I can look at it in my mind. I think about what her bright eyes, nose and lips looked like when she was in her twenties. Her face was symmetrical and her features were in harmony, but if she had complaints about her husband in her 30s, her eyes would look different or her nose would get crooked. Her face would be crooked and not symmetrical. I take a mental picture of what her face looked like in her 20s, 30s, and 40s, and I think to myself that, since her face changed in her 30s and 40s, I should tell her about it and what she should do to correct it. That is something to be thankful for. Moonlight shining through passing cloud is sentimental and poetic. It is full of poetic sentiment. Compared to a round moon that shines in a clear sky; a moon hidden behind the clouds shines through breaks in the clouds in all kinds of colors, so it gives a different feeling. Therefore, the changes in Mother's face during her lifetime can be a representation of the harmony of heaven and earth. A man who can miss it, taste it and find interest in it, and live his life in style is a happy man. (590-029, 2008.05.18)

Part 7: True Father's Letters

Outline of True Mother's Life 7: True Father's Letters

During the first world tour, True Father gave encouragement to True Mother, True Children, Church President Eu Hyo-won and other members in Korea by sending them personal, handwritten letters. In spite of his grueling schedule with no time for rest, he sent dozens of letters and illustrated postcards, beginning with his first letter sent from San Francisco on February 15, 1965. He tried to keep Mother and the leaders updated on how the tour was going, and on his feelings at the time, and he encouraged those in Korea to continue their work.

From True Father's letters we can sense his heartfelt love and expectations for True Mother, the True Children and the members, as well as his own feelings about the tour. True Mother and the central leaders also wrote to Father to let him know about the work being done in Korea.

True Father's letters sent during the world tour

True Father departed from Gimpo International Airport on January 28, 1965, to embark on a historic world tour that concluded on October 10. During that period, True Father visited Japan, the United States,

Canada, 5 nations in Central and South America, 17 nations in Europe, 6 nations in the Middle East, and 8 nations in Asia.

In his first letter, sent on February 15 from San Francisco, USA, True Father asked after True Mother's health and wrote as follows:

"Now that I have come to America and we have been separated from each other, I once again realize what precious people we are, and I am grateful to be able to experience in various aspects how each of us has been given a great mission to fulfill. In other words, we are a couple entrusted with the responsibility for heaven and earth and the resolution of the historical destiny, which can be achieved by no one else. Moreover, we stand at the focal point where every mistake we make can sway the whole. Therefore, how important are the duties we must perform in our lives! Hence, we should become a couple that can fulfill the duties of filial piety and loyalty to Heaven, make every effort for earth, and shine forth in our position of realizing all historical hopes."

True Father also expressed the innermost feelings of his heart toward the Church members who had received God's call "When I look upon the sincere faces of the members who are doing their utmost best, I realize once again that the children of Heaven are truly different. The more I realize this, the more I feel that the position of True Parents is a fearful one."

In a letter he sent from Las Vegas on February 25, he described the difficulties of traveling in a car in the following words:

"We will arrive in Washington, D.C. after traveling on this long and wide road for the entire month of March. Since Nevada and several other states are more or less a desert, I have been told that we will have to travel through the desert for a week, and I am trying to keep up my spirits. What I have realized on this visit to America is that the future fate of the Unification Church will largely depend on the battles we will fight within the vast land of America."

Even when he was tired with the road travel and his busy schedule, True Father occasionally sent letters filled with words expressing how much he missed and thought of True Mother. In the letter he sent from Little Rock, Arkansas, on March 6, he said, "I think of the land of Korea all the way across the Pacific, with the belief that Heaven will treasure you all the more as He gazes upon your frail form and sees that you are working to fulfill your responsibility. I guess missing the one you have left behind is only natural." He also added, "I think of coming again to America with Mother. Please take care of yourself."

Letters showing True Father's heartfelt affection and resolution

True Father expressed his deep love for True Mother in the letters he sent to her, and did not forget to tell her, "Please take care of your health, study hard and pray in various ways, so that you can shine forevermore in your position of great responsibility." He also revealed his regrets about not traveling with her, "I have experienced all kinds of things, which makes me all the sorer that you could not come with me."

True Father also displayed his delight in receiving True Mother's letters, as well as his new resolution for the Will. The following is from the letter he sent from Brattleboro, Vermont, on March 20:

"I received the letter you sent a few days ago in Washington, D.C. It was an indescribable joy to receive word from you. Now that I am away, I have even deeper feelings and a greater sense of importance regarding the circumstances you have written about. Moreover, I always remember the little ones and the members, and how we all lived together back in Seoul. I feel that any difficulties we might face during our time apart will bring us that much closer together, with an even stronger tie between us. Therefore, I am sure that, in the course of your life, you too will come to have appreciation for a past in which you have had to persevere for the great Will. Considering once again the true preciousness of marching forward for our victory as we weep tears for our great responsibility and mission while we are still in this world, I realize that I truly have so much to thank you for. Since His is the great, noble Will, let us persevere through all that we have to do for it."

In the letter True Father sent from Denver on March 25, he wrote a veiled apology to True Mother, "I am sorry I speak of my resolve in every letter I write;" and in the letter sent on April 16 from Washington, D.C., he also spoke of how much he missed his children: "I think of the young ones. I miss them. Sometimes I look at their pictures."

True Mother replied to every one of True Father's letters, writing of how the children were growing and how the Church was doing. The following is an excerpt from True Mother's letter sent on July 22.

"I am grateful that Heavenly Father is looking after us. Thank you for your letter. What great difficulties you must be facing, both physically and spiritually, as you travel around the world for the great Will! It

pains me that I cannot be of even a little help to you as you go about doing your great work. Whenever I read the letters you have been kind enough to remember to write and send, my heart fills with tears because I feel so unworthy and I miss you. Tonight, I miss you even more. Those of us here are continuing with our work, thanks to the grace of your concern. We held a workshop for youths two days ago, and it was a great success. There were miracles of fire, and the young members who newly joined us are firmly determined to participate in the 40-day summer course and make notable contributions, which I find praiseworthy. We hope for Heaven to continue to guide and stimulate us. We are having a little trouble with witnessing because the entire nation of Korea is now suffering from either drought or flood damage, but we are continuing to make efforts without taking any rest."

True Mother ended the letter with the words, "Hoping that I can become the person you wish me to be, and also hoping for your love, I will end this letter. Please keep yourself healthy as you carry out your work for the great Will until I see you again." True Mother always expressed her heartfelt gratitude and esteem for True Father, and renewed her resolution as the companion in the work of realizing God's Will.

Chapter 1: My Beloved

To you, my beloved,
May you spread the dream of peace far and wide
Beyond the horizons filled with sorrow
Over the plains of infinite happiness
Bringing love and peace to blossom
(August 16, 1985, East Garden)

I am so grateful to you, Mother

Ye Jin Omma, the days are flying by. It has already been a month. As I think about the mountains and rivers of Korea, I feel as if it is a foreign country far, far away. As it says on the stationery, I am in Las Vegas. This place is famous worldwide for its casinos. I left Los Angeles this morning and created one holy ground nearby on Mt. Whitney, a high mountain, and another in Death Valley, the lowest elevation in the western hemisphere. After establishing these holy grounds, I traveled for three hours and am just now settling into my hotel room. I will be departing at 8:00 a.m. tomorrow, so please know that I will be keeping up with my tour schedule. I do not think I will have time to write a letter tomorrow. Even if you do not hear from me, please do not worry about how things are going. I ask that you fulfill your mission, studying English according to your set schedule and trying to resolve all problems with prayer. I received the letter you sent to Los Angeles the other day in answer to my letter from San Francisco. I was so happy to hear about Hyo Jin and Ye Jin! It is definitely true that nothing can stop me from thinking about them no matter how far away I am from them. Please be careful in the middle of your pregnancy and take care of your health. I am following my course, and my sense of duty is directing me to fulfill my responsibility in America. I am keeping to my itinerary today and tomorrow and heading toward the southern part of the United States. I am working sincerely to accomplish this great heavenly mission. I felt very close to the American members that I met in San Francisco and Los Angeles. I am well, with hardly any discomfort.

Since they are all family members, I hardly feel any distance, so please know that I was at ease. From now on, America's fate depends upon their efforts. I only pray with hope that this large American continent will be set ablaze with Heaven's fire. The people who are traveling with me are Young Oon and Bong-chun, and two young Americans, making a total of five people. We will travel throughout March until we arrive in Washington, DC. I am keeping my mind strong, since I was told we have to cross through desert for a week because several states in addition to Nevada are in desert regions. I deeply realized that the future destiny of the Unification Church is to fight here in America. I am astounded by its widespread modern facilities and advanced transportation system. That is why I realized that the full-scale development of our movement cannot ignore America. I feel that Korea is such a small country. Nevertheless, when I consider our devastated homeland from a providential viewpoint, I feel the greatness of our mission and pray for its success. As I anticipated, the American members who joined us because of the Principle are the same as church members in Korea. When it comes to the Will, we are no different. Other than that, I feel responsible for the close family members whom you have been working hard to raise. Please take good care of them. They are in a position of a sacrificial offering for the sake of the Will. I am truly grateful to you, Omma, that even though you bear responsibility for such an enormous mission, you are able to relate to them with a steadfast heart and treat them all in the same way. For this I am truly grateful to Heaven. Please maximize your talent for doing that, make good progress and bear good fruit during this period. This is the chance for us to experience the preciousness of our relationship with Heaven. Please tell our children that I am doing well. Please give my best wishes to all the members. I am using this time while I am traveling to briefly write you. Please take care of your health and fulfill your responsibility. That's all for now. -February 25, 1965, Las Vegas, Nevada

I can only be grateful to you

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: Night has passed, and today is March 25. In three days, it will already be two

months since we parted. I think you must be going through many experiences during your busy life in Seoul. I am so sorry that you are unable to live an easy-going life. My heart goes out to you, knowing that you must always be careful in your public life, lived among numerous people who are centered on the Will. Furthermore, I feel so bad that you have to deal with all those people around you while you are carrying a child in your womb. Especially, I am concerned about you in your condition making effort every morning to go to the holy ground. But on the other hand, I think it is such a beautiful thing that you are doing. I am grateful that you have become a great example for many people. Only I know the great mission that you are trying to surmount and the cross of the heart that you carry. All I can do is pray that you will become the True Mother who will be exalted and honored by multitudes of people. Please give everyone my regards. Please explain to them that I cannot send letters to each of them. I assume that you are often anxious about the children. I try to picture them and imagine how they are growing up so quickly. Despite my busy days traveling through the northern part of America, I still want to stay in touch with you, so I am writing. Unlike the southern states, the northern states are cold this time of year. The weather is changing, but there are still many snowy days when we must drive very carefully. Although I think about the great significance of traveling to these far places, still I often think how the course of restoration has been filled with sadness. As I view the different scenery in each state, I realize the vastness of this land and the magnitude of Heaven's providence. It makes me reflect on the labor required for Heaven's providence of restoration. I am so grateful that you pray for me and accompany me in heart wherever I go. I also salute you for taking such an important responsibility, and I am very much looking forward to seeing you demonstrating your heart for the Will in the future. I hope that one day you and I will be able to travel around America together. Please always take care of your health and work diligently to pave the way. I hope you will guard God's dignity by fulfilling your responsibility, and thus, increasing our hope for tomorrow. As time goes by, I want to know more and more about what is going on in Korea. Today, I write to you from Denver, the state capital of Colorado. When you see this letter, you will probably search for Denver on a map. After breakfast, I will drive to Salt Lake City and have a reunion with Sang-chul. Today it is already Thursday, and I am thinking that you must be wondering a lot about my situation, so despite my busy schedule, I am writing you. Next week we will celebrate Parents' Day in Washington, DC, therefore we are pushing ourselves to travel quickly. There in Washington, I will write you again with the latest news. Again, I urge you to take care of your health and not neglect studying. When can I ever have enough time in my busy life for you? Once our youth is gone, it will never return, so let us cherish it and use each moment for the Will. I am sorry to bring this up every time I write you, as if I am asking you to make a new determination. The reason is that as a husband I have responsibility for you, and I know that you will be grateful for it later. Anyway, who else can say such a thing to you? You already know how precious this time is, so I apologize for saying it, but please keep this in mind and make extra effort, being so serious about it so as to surprise me. Also, it is good for you to think of me deeply in your heart. That kind of experience is also necessary. I believe that you understand well that I am always yearning for you, the precious True Mother who is centered on the Will. Whether we die or live, we must overcome many things to carry out the Will. I will stop here, but please take care of yourself. -March 25, 1965, Denver

I am praying for your good health

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: We departed on April 30 and arrived in New York after four days, on May 3 at 10:30 p.m. In the car on the way back, they were saying that there were letters waiting in several places. So, I was praying aloud, and hoping in my heart that your letter would be there too. As soon as I arrived, I asked, "Are there any letters for me?" and I was surprised to receive letters from you and the church president. The last time I received a letter from you, I wrote a reply then and there, and gave it to Bo-hi to mail to you, but since you indicate that you have not received it yet, I think it may have gotten lost. I am trying to remember what I wrote in that reply as I write this letter. This will be the first time I am sharing news with you since our last phone call. I'm sorry to hear that your pregnancy has made you exhausted. By the time you receive this letter it will have been more than 15 days since you last heard from me. Not knowing your situation, I had been looking forward to receiving your letter, thinking that you already received mine. I met with many important people, mainly in Washington, DC during that time. I will explain that to you more in detail later. I think that if they had seen Hyo Jin's Omma, they probably would think more highly of me! All I am worried about is that you are healthy. Please do not be anxious about going into labor; everything will work out. Since that moment is close at hand, do whatever you think is best. When I went to New York, I realized that in order to place you on the world stage, it will be necessary for you come to America and learn how to live in America by living with me. However, I'm sorry that our current circumstances do not allow it. Whenever I come to New York, and am unable to be there together with you in Seoul, I think about you more and more. Every time I think about you, I believe it is helpful for us, and I am grateful to Heaven for it. Around 25 members accompanied me as we visited the most important locations in New York City. I will send you pictures later. I realized deeply that the power of this civilization will make a major contribution to building the Kingdom of Heaven in the future. Today I received letters from London and Rome. We will build churches in these places. We also will go to the Netherlands, and we will go to France. During my time in America, I will select a number of missionary countries and implement this plan. Please anticipate this and pray hard for its success. I seem to be tired. Please forgive me. I will stop here. Please take care. Please send the church president my regards. Everyone is doing well, right? If you are planning to write to anyone else who is close to us,

please give them my warmest regards as well. -May 4, 1965, Washington, DC

We have much to do so take care of yourself

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: We just left Madrid, Spain and are flying toward England. It is 8:15 p.m. on July 14. The sun is shining down on the fields and mountains of Spain. It will be twilight soon. Spain is an agricultural country, but their fields do not look very fertile, and there are not many mountains or trees. Looking from the airplane, the distant sky and land look soft due to a faint fog. In two hours, we will arrive in London, England, the central nation of western civilization, and I am flying with great wonder and thoughts of meeting with Young Oon Kim. She said she witnessed to several people over the course of two months, and I believe that she will bring them with her to meet me today. The sun is beginning to hide behind the western clouds, and the fields and mountains are starting to darken. As we fly over the Straits of Dover, I hope our visit will open a path that elevates the Will. Going to England truly makes me feel like I am returning home. Today, we rode a tour bus in Spain and visited the palace and museum. The royal palace was built over a period of 26 years, and an incredibly great number of works of art that encompass all of European civilization are kept there. The museum has around 3,000 paintings, including many famous masterpieces. The airplane is now entering the clouds. The sunlight is changing to an evening sunset glow and flickering in through the window. Now the stewardess is pushing me to have dinner, so I will have to stop writing you here. Flying to England, I am eagerly anticipating news from home. I am thinking of all the church members and hope that they are doing well. Also, I hope that you, Omma, are healthy, and that our children are healthy. I want to hear about all the activities, and again I am looking forward to the day we can all meet again. Please put your heart at ease and know that all of us are safe and sound. Please give my regards to those members close to us. As I ride on the white clouds and look across the fields and hills spread out like a garden, I am crafting memories from the sounds on the plane and the view from the window. The sunlight is now dimmed by dark clouds, and even the bright cabin has become dark, so I will stop here. Take care. -July 14, 1965, on an airplane bound for England

Banner of peace and safety

To Hyo Jin Omma: Time flies by so quickly. In just a few days it will be four months since our parting. I felt at peace when I heard the news about headquarters, so thank you for sharing that with me. I understand that you are doing well, and I hope you will continue to be loyal before the great mission. Until now, without me, you have been carrying a heavy responsibility with a serious heart, and whenever I am given reports about it, I always feel reassured. May you establish the way of loyalty and filial piety in your Heaven-given mission forever! I constantly picture you being honored throughout all generations. Upon you, so pure and precious, may God's peace dwell for eternity. Truly, I sincerely wish to comfort you after you worked so hard for the Parents' Day event that just passed. I imagined that you fell fast asleep after it was over, and I prayed that peace and health would surround you. I was deeply concerned about you, and before the ceremony began I prayed for God's blessing and good fortune. I know that your heart is full of love for me. I am looking forward to the day when everything you have deeply experienced during your life course will be a blessing to our family. It is now 1:40 a.m. It is a calm night on this side of the world. These nights make me miss the nights back home. When I think about the fact that it is afternoon right now in our hometown, it seems so strange. But I am writing this letter now, just thinking it is nighttime. I am wondering how Omma will be sleeping. I know you are always thinking about America. I know that you wish me to come back as soon as possible. Amid that kind of precious heart, may you have a sweet sleep. That is what I wish for you. I hope that although we are separated between our home and a foreign land, tonight everything you are talking about and thinking of will become a condition that God can be proud of, that emits a beautiful fragrance. You are pregnant now, and I hope the baby in your womb is healthy. Mother, please be grateful that Heaven is greatly protecting our family. How much I hope that we can become a family that brings grace to the destiny of heaven and earth. God and the Unification Church members also think this way, so I feel we must concentrate more on the education of our children. As I joyfully imagine changing the course of restoration, which is full of sadness, pain and heavy burdens, into a great and glorious achievement, I think about how much more I will have to endure, and I make my determination to do that. Likewise, my having to advise you to become not just my faithful wife but also a faithful daughter for Heaven pains me, knowing how much you will have to endure to go such a path. Again, as my Omma you should be able to be honored by all women even after you go to the spirit world, and all heaven and earth should be able to praise you; that is why I have to tell you again to go this path. Yet my heart aches to do so. All those who are working closely with me want to see you. As we share the same destiny with heaven and earth, I hope your blood, sweat and tears can become the fertilizer for you to soon become True Mother, blooming like a peaceful, sweet flower. That is why I want to advise you and raise you, so please accept my words joyfully. After I return to Korea, again I will have to push you and bring you with me. I am in that kind of position, so please sympathize with me. Heaven will have to do it; the earth will have to do it. It is all because they know the preciousness and greatness of your position and are trying to lift you up. So even though the final cross of heart comes to you, I hope you will triumph over it in a beautiful way. Please become the Mother who will be truly respected by people who empathize with her precious life as a woman and become the example of meritorious virtue for all time to come. Omma, your life should be able to disclose even greater height and preciousness than mine. Whenever you tell me how busy it is in Seoul, I feel

immense gratitude toward everyone for their hard work. Their accomplishments are directly proportional to their efforts. I received the letter that the members signed in blood and you forwarded to me. Likewise, I am keeping my own 21-day condition. I just took a bath as preparation for it, and now I am resuming my letter to you. This letter is getting longer and longer because I am thinking that you may be wondering about the news here in America. If you examine the lifestyle here, the meals are fine, just as in Korea. During this tour, Suk-hee and Ki-suk are totally dedicating themselves to serve me, so I have not felt uncomfortable or inconvenienced. When I have time, I struggle to master English. I really need a lot of time. Omma, you should also do some conversation practice. I have concluded that memorization is the best method. Besides that, most of my time is spent meeting people. I can see that the progress is as I had imagined. I think about living with you in America in the near future. I think of this whenever I see something good. Also, please take care of your health and keep your spirit up. Offer solace to the members and to Heaven by singing cheerfully throughout the day. I will stop here. Please give the members my best regards. -May 21, 1965, Washington, DC

Chapter 2: The Light of True Mother

Longing for a new tomorrow

Dear Omma: It has already been 20 days since I left home. I left behind me a lot of history as I passed through Japan. But now I am in San Francisco, and as I gain a sense of a new cultural lifestyle and visit scenic spots, I think of you. When I think about how you are alone, living in such complicated circumstances for the sake of the Will, I am so concerned. I am sure you have a lot of uncertainty due to your inexperience. Nonetheless, I hope that during this period you will be victorious over your circumstances through a lot of prayer. After coming to America, and as we remain apart, I realize all the more how precious we are to each other, and what a great mission we share. The feeling that comes with that realization is something I am very grateful for. How crucial is our lifelong duty! Our historical destiny as a couple is to take responsibility for heaven and earth. We have a mission to do what no other couple can do. We occupy the central position where our deeds, both good and bad, will influence the whole. Therefore, we must become a shining couple our whole life long, one that fulfills the duty of loyalty and filial piety toward Heaven, working hard for the world, and to liberate and accomplish the historical Will. In order to fulfill this serious responsibility, I am offering all my sincerity before the American members, the Japanese members and Heaven. When I see the earnest expressions of the members and the sight of them devoting themselves, I feel they are indeed Heaven's children. The more I feel that, the greater the awe in which I hold True Parents' position. I am slowly becoming familiar with the various problems and issues. Japanese members and American members are very different from one another. I will omit the details and save those for next time, but we must possess Heaven in our hearts and convey the heart of Heaven to others. Please comfort the people who are close to you and develop your motherly presence. I will also work to complete this tour with strength. I focus my concern on the position of our homeland and our international mission, imagining a new tomorrow. There is so much I want to say, but I will stop here and wait for the day when I can see you again to deliver those words to you. I wish you well. Please forgive me for stopping here. -February 15, 1965, San Francisco, California

Preparing for a big victory

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: I am wondering how our church is doing. I hope you and the children are safe and sound. I would like to hear about the results of the revival team. Whenever I think of you doing your very best to fulfill your responsibility as a young woman with a delicate frame, I believe that Heaven will look upon you tenderly. Now my thoughts move across the Pacific Ocean to Korea, where I miss the people and the land that I love. It is natural for people who are separated by distance to yearn for the ones we love. Because I am the type of person who adapts well to foreign countries, I do not feel uncomfortable here at all as I travel around the American continent. It is already March 6, 1:05 a.m., and I am writing to you after having traveled hundreds of miles, arriving at the Rose Motel in Little Rock, the state capital of Arkansas. Just a few hours ago in another state, at 8:00 p.m., I selected a holy ground. This is the tenth state in which I have made a holy ground since coming to America. During this tour, I find myself thinking about the tours I did in Korea before 1960. Oh, America, when will you bend your big body and bow in service to Heaven? In order to accomplish this mission I am leading heavenly programs, and my only desire is to bring victory and build a foundation for the restoration of the world. I came here saying that I would not write letters, but I felt sorry when it occurred to me that you might be expecting them, so I am quickly writing to you. Our mission is becoming greater and greater. Our members at home and abroad are the same. I feel their profound sense of duty from the way they treat me. I cannot help but worry about your heavy responsibilities. Please study hard. Keep your body healthy and pray a lot. I feel sorry that you have such a burden despite being so young and delicate and I am grateful to you for following me so well. Please take good care of your health, as I am thinking of bringing you here to America. I entreat you to stand large and victorious before Heaven. May you be at peace at all times. In case I cannot write a letter to the church president, please convey this to him. I will stop here. -March 6, 1965, Little Rock, Arkansas

True Father's light

Dear Omma: This is Washington, DC. I am writing you from the capital of the United States. One month has passed, and I have experienced so many different environments. That is to say, as I went about my busy schedule, I never before experienced such huge changes between the environment and climate of one location and the next as I have in the course of this tour. As of today, I have selected 21 holy grounds, including the one in Washington, DC that I established this morning at 11:00 a.m. You will be able to see pictures of all the holy grounds later. After coming from the west to the east, we will be heading north. While touring this large continent and selecting holy grounds in each state, I am hoping for the future development of America. When I first met the American members, there were many things that left an impression on me. As I experience all of these things, I think about how sorry I am that you could not come with me. However, I know that it will be better if you come after I pave the way, and I am grateful for everything, as this is the way of the Will. I also know that it is valuable for people who love each other to be apart while thinking about each other, because then when they reunite, they rejoice all the more. I believe, Omma, that you are doing much internal reflection and making resolutions for the future. I pray that this can be a productive period, during which we can be more filial before the Will and be examples for others. I know you are working hard to take care of the children, but I have hope that your preparing for the future with patience and gratitude will bring light to shine brightly on your path of responsibilities. Please take care of your health, study hard and pray about many points. I hope your path will be lit up before you. I miss the children. Whenever I think that our children are waiting for Daddy, I take out photos of the children and look at them. I look at your picture as well. Our children say, "We love Mommy." As much as our children have such a special love for you, so do I. I want to hear about all the things they are experiencing while I am away. The American members are also very high-spirited. I feel that the members at headquarters are working hard to fulfill their responsibilities. Today is Sunday the 14th, and we will be holding an evening meeting. On the 12th about 60 people gathered, so probably that many will gather tonight as well. The future of America rests with them and their efforts. Please give me an update about the headquarters. I soon will begin touring the northern part of America. Please tell the blessed members, regional leaders and other members that I cannot send them letters, but that I hope all is well. Please give them my best wishes. The climate in Washington, DC is the same as the climate in Korea. I went sightseeing and saw many historic places yesterday. I went on a tour of the White House and the U.S. Capitol. I learned a lot through these visits. I traveled around the city while praying for America to have a bright future. I will write you again. Goodbye for now. -March 14, 1965, Washington, DC

A daughter of filial piety to Heaven

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: I know the daily newspaper is publishing false accusations, but I am praying for peace. Before we know it, we will enter a global transition. It already has been six months since I left home. Because tomorrow, July 1 is when I leave for Canada, we are very busy with preparations for our departure. As of today, my work in America is finished, and tomorrow I will begin touring again to establish holy grounds around the world. There will not be a moment's rest. I returned from meeting with two United States senators before writing this letter. From this meeting, I was able to make a rough assessment of America's circumstances. In addition, I met former President Eisenhower on the 25th, and a few more senators a couple days before that. Meeting with the current leaders of the world, I came up with many ideas. I know that there are a lot of things that relate to the world mission centering on our great Principle. I am so grateful for you whenever I think about how hard you are working to fulfill your responsibility. I only ask that you face Heaven and carry out your responsibility as a filial daughter. I am writing this letter as I sit in front of Hyo Jin's and Ye Jin's pictures. I feel as if we can see each other. As I look at their pictures and write this letter, I think to myself, "I have to return quickly to see them." How I truly miss them. And as the days come closer to your delivery, I am so sorry that I cannot be there. Please discuss with church president, Eu Hyo-won and come up with a plan for when you go into labor. Please be cautious about your meals and consider your nutrition. I am concerned that lack of funds reported by Hyo-won may be affecting you. But at the same time, I am grateful that you are very frugal. Everyone must offer everything with a sincere heart and filial piety, so that Heaven can take responsibility. We are all doing well here. The American members are making effort both spiritually and practically. I am praying that God will guide them for their future. I am again sending you my itinerary, so please look at it and ease your heart. I will be protected and will return safely. In the meantime, you will have to work hard for the children. We are planning to visit 40 nations. After we depart, I will let you know where you can contact us. I am praying for Korea's current situation. Thinking this trip is for the purpose of paving the way for Korea's future, I would like to relieve my regret about the Korean people. I am worried because you said the drought is severe. The worse it gets, the more the church members must exert themselves. I am sorry that the members have to work so hard during this hot season. I sympathize with you having to take the position of being an example to the members under such circumstances. I realize how important the role of the leaders is. I pray that you may find peace. Please excuse my hasty writing. I am in the middle of a hectic schedule. Please be safe until we meet again in the middle of October. Take care of yourself -June 30, 1965, Washington, DC

Our future task is very large

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: It has been a few days since we arrived in Germany. In comparison with the American members, I feel more loyalty from the members here. The German citizens are very diligent, and I felt it even more when I saw how their country has recovered since the war. Around 60 percent of the entire country was in ruins after the war, but the German people created their nation anew. Taking in this fact made me reflect upon Korea's position, and I realized the weight of our responsibility. I was looking forward to hearing news from headquarters after arriving in Germany, but I have not heard anything yet, so I am wondering. Today is August 4. I think about how today reminds me of you, and offer a prayer in memory of this time last year. Since it is August already and you are heavy with child, you must be really worried and concerned, so please entrust everything to Heaven. I was in the living room getting ready to go out when I saw that our itinerary had changed, so I decided to write you a report. As for the name of the baby, if it is a boy, we should give him the "Heung (興)" character, and if it is a girl, we should give her the "In (仁)" character. Thanks to all of your prayers, everyone in our group is safe and sound. We will leave Germany tomorrow and arrive in Italy on the 18th. Please send your letters there next time. You will probably have given birth by then. Please give everyone my regards and please take good care of your health. I keep thinking about my homeland. The children are doing well, right? And please tell the church president to prepare 20 handkerchiefs like the ones I brought from America, and put the same stamp on them. I want to bring gifts back, but because of the weight issue, I do not think it will be possible. Please tell him to do this as a substitute for the gifts. I hope that you may all find peace. Our lodging in Italy has been changed on the itinerary. -August 4, 1965, Germany

Chapter 3: May You Blossom, My Beloved

Persisting for the wide and great Will

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: How hard you must be working to fulfill your mission for the Will despite your heavy responsibilities for the children and your busy life! I know you will be enduring until the end and working hard for the sake of the future. I am grateful for this. We departed from New York yesterday, and after a busy day, we stayed at the Holly Motel in Brattleboro, Vermont. And just before leaving there, I picked up my pen to write you. Today we are busy getting ready to depart for Cleveland, Ohio. I am sorry that I only have a short time to write and convey news to you. Since we are trying to return to Washington, DC for Parents' Day on April 2, we are extremely busy. It is still winter here in the northern part of the country, so it's very cold. I received your letter the other day in Washington, DC. I felt indescribable joy upon receiving it. I realize how important it is to communicate with you while we are apart. Furthermore, the children and the Seoul members are always on my mind. While we are separated like this, although each of us has to take care of many things, I feel that a greater power is bonding us together even more strongly. Therefore, I hope that you, Omma, will experience how precious and great it is to have endured for the sake of the Will when you look back on this experience in the future. In this world in which we are living, I again realize how important it is to march forward toward victory, shedding tears as we fulfill our great responsibility and mission. Omma, I feel I have so much to be grateful to you for. All that we do is for the sake of the Will, which is so great and high, and the work we will have to do is in proportion to that. So let us keep going forward. I am praying for the well-being of all members, who are close to my heart. Please take care of yourself and the children, and fight bravely until we meet again. While I travel, I am dreaming about a tomorrow that will be filled with hope and the world stage that we will reach together. I rejoice thinking of the days to come when we will embark on speaking tours together. I yearn for the day when you will become the great True Mother who will bring victory over evil and fulfill all her responsibilities. Whenever I miss you and the children, I look at pictures of you and yearn for when I will see you again. When I think about Ye Jin attending school and how much she has already grown, I am concerned about how you will handle your growing responsibility for her. I also miss Hyo Jin, who should be growing well, although I know he is looking for his Daddy. I trust that you will do well, and that you will become the kind of woman who will be most precious to me, in whom I will take much pride as the woman of all women. When I think of this, I realize what a happy man I am! With this, I will move forward. Please become the highest, most precious and victorious True Mother. I am also striving to become the True Father who lives for the sake of heaven and earth. That is the only thing in my mind. Please take good care of yourself. -March 20, 1965, Brattleboro, Vermont

Creating a happy historic life

Dear Omma: I read the letter you sent me, including your report about Parents' Day. Thank you for your hard work. Indeed, you are so precious as the Mother, and for this I am truly grateful. I know that you worked hard for two events during my absence. I am so happy that you have fulfilled your responsibility before God, as He desired. When I think about the manifestation of Parents' Day on earth, I realize how serious our position as True Parents is. This event is indeed an awesome responsibility, and I cannot help but bow down before this incredible mission -- that we can finally fulfill this day that should have been established 6,000 years ago, when God was happy with the original world. How much blood, sweat and tears were shed by countless prophets and ancestors who sacrificed themselves and suffered through the course of history to establish this day? God alone knows the ups and downs that I endured on the sorrowful path of indemnity to establish one woman, True Mother, and I pledge, by attending you as that

woman, to be victorious in bringing peace. At the same time, I consider that Parents' Day could be instituted as the day of God's victory only after I had offered my youth and 40 years of my life, experiencing the pain and suffering of heaven and earth as I walked a path in the twilight and headed for the new dawn. That past, filled with many bitter sorrows as I made the long journey for the heavenly law, makes me think of you, Omma, as even more precious. However, even though we welcomed the sixth Parents' Day, I must again impose on you responsibilities and missions for you to carry. I deeply sympathize with you, Hyo Jin's Omma, that you are destined to go along with me continually in order that we may achieve the level of global Parents. Until the last moment, we still have to keep advancing until we reach the goal; then, we will have vindication over the enemy. I know how grave your motherly responsibility is, bearing so many crosses. Therefore, even though I am abroad, please understand that I am praying for you sincerely. Especially as you are now carrying a child, please take care of your health. Make tomorrow shine by fulfilling your responsibility. Both heaven and earth regard you as so precious. You and I are recognized as the substantial representatives at the center of Parents' Day, the day that all humankind yearns for and will rejoice over. As the whole cosmos is offering that day to us, we have to make it shine. Although you are young, may you realize a heart that is lofty and high. As you carry Heaven's burden and the burden of the world, may you fulfill the responsibility of the Holy Lord who creates the realm of victory, where your life of good fortune and historical significance bears fruit as the Mother in whose bosom all heaven and earth long to be embraced. We cannot forget about the great number of people who have resolved to give up their lives for us. We have also been given the solemn command to become the original beings of light, so that we can give life to the people who attend us and regard us as their beacon of life. If people from many countries in addition to Korea, Japan and America want to serve us, we will be indebted to them. We must not leave even one point of darkness in the background of history. Don't you think I know the hardships faced by those leaders who are assuming responsibility? Hallelujah to the holy day, Parents' Day! May we, the substantial beings of this day give glory to God and attend Him! Let us build up our virtue and shout out for restoration in order to fulfill the mission of the Parents! When I think about this letter, together with the content of the letter to the church president, I realize that you must be very tired. Thank you for your hard work. I am ever praying that you will be victorious. May you remain healthy by taking care of yourself, and fulfill all your responsibilities. I spent Parents' Day in Washington and was busy tidying up afterward. The reason I could not write you until now was because there were many people who came to see me, and I had to deal with some matters here. This was the first Parents' Day in America and the first time

America attended me. Because I wanted to celebrate Parents' Day in the capital of the United States, I concluded my busy national tour, passed through San Francisco, and flew to Washington, DC, on March 31. With the deep sincerity of the Washington members, I celebrated this historical event. Members from many different regions attended. God was with us, and we spent three days together with no regard for day or night. We had a very good experience. Even as I spent that time solemnly, I was thinking about Seoul. With your chair placed next to mine, I thought of you, crossing the continent and the Pacific Ocean in my heart. The American members dressed in white holy robes and offered bows as they prayed to achieve honor before heaven. This was the first time I conducted a ceremony with people from all five races. The event was very successful, and I resolved to expand it more on a worldwide scale. For as long as I am in Washington, my days are fully scheduled. Besides that, I need to meet with some very important people. By the middle of July, I will have to depart for Europe. I will let you know about my next itinerary later. I hope that you may always be at peace. -April 7, 1965, Washington, DC

True example of homeland

To Omma: I have created many new memories during this time, and it is hard to believe that 70 days have passed already. It must be natural to yearn for our homeland when we experience a different way of life. I find myself reminiscing deeply about the path I have walked for 45 years. It was a path for the Will that no one knew. Only Heaven supported me as I endured the cleaning up of our homeland's past and strove with tears in all seriousness and determination to succeed in the course of restoration. Let us advance toward victory, singing praises for the mission of the noble True Parents, who are the only ones who are offering their lives in this way. Let us express genuine gratitude for the sake of the nation, passionately paving the way of hope for our homeland. Since my life is for the sake of the Will, I am making a new resolution before Heaven to offer all my determination and loyalty. Today is one day before April 17 (16th day of the 3rd lunar month), the anniversary of the day I anointed you, Omma, to fulfill Heaven's mission. It reminds me of the past, when I toiled hard and endured long to pave this road. In this foreign country I offer sincere gratitude for your great heart. Ever since I placed you in charge of the heavenly mission and set you on a path that even heaven and earth have been concerned about, it was your heart that created the path to victory. As the mother of several children, you are again in a position of having to worry, but I sympathize with your path, and will spend April 17 together with you in my thoughts. The more ups and downs there are in our past, the more we should be able to sing praises for the value of what we have experienced in the face of history, should we not? Let us run the course of restoration with strength. We must invest all our sincerity and effort for the sake of our Kingdom of Heaven, our world and our blessed land. In the course of our determined life, for whom are we going to run? We only have one precious life. Let us offer sincere gratitude for the ultimate purpose of our life, and offer high praise for the mission of the noble True Parents. With sincere gratitude let us advance toward victory tomorrow,

the day after tomorrow, and on and on. I think about how great you will be five years from now, and I begin to imagine a picture of what you will become in the future. If ten years pass, and then ten more, I expect that the world will look at our past as it unfolded and recognize that we acted nobly. When that time arrives, the public image of the Will we pursued and of our family will be different from today. I am resolved to build the family of the original homeland as the true example that God desires. I know you also will have spent March 16 reflecting on the past. Who knew that our Holy Wedding was so historic? Wasn't it a day when Heaven alone rejoiced, while Satan grieved? When I think that when we started the family of the new heaven and earth, Heaven was trying to give us blessings and Satan was trying to slander us, I wish that we had offered even greater devotion and sincerity at that time. I also think about our young children; I miss them. Of course, I look at their pictures from time to time. Spring is arriving here now. I believe it is probably spring in Korea as well. It would be nice if you could take some time to enjoy the spring weather. I hope you can find solace in loving all of creation as if I were with you. I am going to visit several historic sites in Washington, DC with our members. In the middle of your busy life, please be at ease and take care of your health during your pregnancy. Please also try to take vitamins. Hearing your voice last night on the phone was deeply moving for me. Let us gather many stories to share when we are next together. Forgive me for not writing more neatly. -April 16, 1965, Washington, DC

Restoring the cosmos

To Omma: I was just looking at the picture you sent me that Ye Jin drew, and I am very pleased with the wisdom of our growing children. Looking at the picture makes me think of how much they have grown and developed. I really want to see them so much. Hyo Jin also looks like he has become quite the little cutie now. The image of him looking for me, his Daddy, is clear in my mind. They must have grown a lot. I want to come back home quickly and see them. When I think of our new baby, my heart leaps, and I am counting on my fingers the days until August 7 when our new baby is due to be born. You seem to be worried, but just entrust everything to Heaven and there will be no need to worry. I offered a prayer to Heavenly Father, and my heart is with you even though I am not there. Since things are no doubt becoming more difficult, please be cautious. I got a glimpse of your worried heart in Ye Jin's letter. You should proceed with the childbirth however you think best. I just want you to be able to go through it with a peaceful heart. Also, this is a time when loyalty is demanded of us. The efforts of headquarters and our mission countries are also necessary. It is great to hear that Korea is doing well. I am grateful whenever I read their reports. Everything is going well, thanks to Heaven's efforts. We must have even greater resolve to accomplish our true heavenly mission. Japan reported that they are developing like Korea. America is also developing. I was really grateful when I realized that heavenly fortune was working together with me when I visited all of these places. All we need to do is quickly accomplish the establishment of God's Day. We must advance with that goal in mind. I want to do everything to help you go over the hill victoriously and obtain the glory of the victorious Mother. Let us keep going with hope that a bright light will illuminate our path. Please take care of your health. Let us take care of the members and prepare for the future so that we can establish blessed families and offer them to Heaven. Then, let us hasten the restoration and bring results and success to heaven and earth. You will receive our travel plans from Bo-hi. We will travel according to this itinerary. I want to follow the Will knowing that you will pray for the heavenly path that we are about to walk. The American members are making a lot of effort both spiritually and physically. Please keep in your mind this image of our sincere members following the Will. I met many people during this time. I guess you must be quite curious. The members here, including my travel companions, are healthy. As I watch heavenly grace cover the entire movement in anticipation of the selection of the remaining holy grounds, I am preparing for our departure. -June 22, 1965, Washington, DC

I pray for your peace and good health

Dear Hyo Jin Omma: How hard you have been working! I am very sorry to hear that you were worried about giving birth prematurely, and it is a relief to hear that everything is progressing normally. In addition, hearing that Ye Jin and Hyo Jin are playing cute tricks and getting along well together makes my heart yearn for home. Furthermore, I know that the first ten days of August are when you may go into labor, and I am extremely sorry I will not be able to make it home before then. However, I know that Heaven will be with you. During the first ten days of July, I will pass through Canada and South America, and then I will arrive in London, the capital of Great Britain, on July 15. I will pass through the continent of Europe, and depart through Greece to Egypt and Jordan, finally crossing over Asia to arrive in Korea during the last ten days of September or the first ten days of October. I know how anxious you are. I especially hope you can take care of your body and stay healthy. I know that you are living in crowded and complicated circumstances, but even if things are difficult please hold fast, and soon the day will come when everything will be resolved. My lifestyle here in Washington is no different from my lifestyle in Korea, but when I eat and when I wake up in the morning, there are times I am immersed in thoughts of my home in Korea. I know you are curious about what is happening here, and how you must be waiting day after day for the mail carrier, and I feel apologetic for not being able to send you letters daily. Yes, it is now 4: 15 a.m. on June 8, and I should be getting ready to go out, but I started writing to you instead. During this time, I have met many people. I try to study English when I have time, but my proficiency is not improving. Yet, I still continue. You, Omma, will also have to study English. I realize this even more

after coming to America. Even if you only do a little at a time, please continue your studies. I am stopping the flow of time to send you my sincere devotion for the Will. I will end here, as I pray for your peace and good health. -June 8, 1965, Washington, DC

My beloved, may you blossom
And spread your fragrance
Throughout heaven and earth
Toward the eternal homeland
(August 23, 1984, Danbury, USA)